

WHEN DESTINIES COLLIDE

WDC

.

PROLOGUE

.

"I'm not meant to be a Prophet" He roared at his father who was sitting on the desk chair in the study.

Bandile who was Zack's father replied calmly.

Bandile: Zachariah Katlego Zulu, will you let God take control?

Zack: Dad can't you see? It's not my calling. You are wrong.

Bandile: Tell me that in a year's time.

Zack: Imagine "24 year old Zulu playboy Prince now Prophet" that must be one striking headline.

Bandile: Zack, the longer you run away from who you are, the painful the punishment will be.

Zack: Baba with all due respect, you must be

inaccurate maybe John has the calling not me.

Bandile:Zack you might be surprised by what's going to happen.

.

.

With that Zack left the Kings study. His dad was not exactly a prophet but he had the gift of vision. He didn't want that significant calling in his life. That meant he would give up most of the things in his life including his playboy ways and he was far from settling down.

.

.

A YEAR LATER

"Mama, please" Young Taylor laughed with her grandma who she was used to calling Mama. She had no parents and well her grandma was the best mama and papa she could ask for.

She was very bright and had pretty high grades which earned her a full scholarship to Stanford

University for a four year degree in Architecture and Interior Design. This was her very last year and she was just 22 years.

Gran: Taylor you are so happy.

Tay: mama I can't complain and I swear no boys. And I keep going to church so I mean after this week I will be leaving. I have to write my finals and then I will be back for good.

Gran: I'm glad Tshepi.

Taylor smiled, it's been a long time since anyone's called her with that name. They just lived in a three bedroomed house that Taylor helped to paint with some of her allowance money.

Her grandmother left her in the lounge. She needed a bit of rest well because of old age.

Taylor just logged on to Whatsapp.

She doesn't even drink. She has been the good girl and she likes to keep it at that.

.

.

Thats the Prologue guys.

I hope I have all of your support for this new diary.And I need a lot of it.

Enjoy!!!

[03/12, 07:12] Lynne: WDC

.

01

.

TAYLOR

"J ust great" I muttered. The people whom I always talk to are offline. I'm bored. And we're in a village for crying out loud. I just made my way to my bedroom. When I got there I just changed clothes and wore my shorts and vest. I'm at home so no one can see my half nakedness. Hallelujah! I laid on my bed and got busy on facebook. Let me just scroll down my newsfeed. I've studied and it's enough gosh! I'm ready for my finals I think

.

ZACK

I was in my office when there was a door knock

Me:come in

The person entered and it turns out it was dad.

Bandile:son and what did I say?

I chuckled,he was right after all.

Me:I know,you were right.

Bandile:so when are you marrying?

Not that again

Me:when I find the bone of my bones,flesh of my flesh that's when I will marry.

Dad chuckled.So far all the women who have been throwing themselves at me do not quite fit the description of the wife I saw in my vision.Dad left and apparently I had been invited to minister at some village.I have my own Ministry and it has grown remarkably well looking at the fact that I started it about 10 months ago.Okay,I need to get to

my house.It's a simple double storey house

I am a business owner as I still own all the businesses I used to run before I accepted my calling.It's very surprising to think that I was a rebel prince.The ministry is keeping me up on my feet I barely have time to check on my businesses but from the financials its doing preetty well.I honestly can't remember the last time I had a break.

I just arrived in my house.I changed clothes and went to the study to read my Bible.lus I need to prepare my sermon.I have to be in the village by tomorrow afternoon as I will be ministering in the evening.

Me:God will I ever rest?

I jotted down a few things before I got into an intensive prayer which lasted for about five hours.Being in the presence of God is so peaceful and wonderful.

I slept around one a.m but by eight I was wide awake. For now I will be driving myself to the village which is a two hour drive from town. I had a shower and after that I wore my chinos and a shirt. I think I will be spending the night at a B&B nearby.

.

TAYLOR

"It's a new day. Party people, party people say yeah! it's a new day" I sang in my room. I have practice with the church choir cause the Prophet will be part of the service today. I need to prep my voice and the leader asked me to grace them with my angelic voice. I had a bath and I wore my floral dress. Practice starts at ten and I need to be there before hand. I walked to the kitchen to prepare some soft porridge for mama. I may be used to being overseas but I haven't lost my roots as of yet. It took me thirty minutes and I dished for myself.

"Smells good in here" That was mama's voice.

Me: molweni mama.

Gran: hello my child, you cooked.

I nodded with a smile.

Gran:then I can't wait to dig in,are you going somewhere?

Me:choir practice,they asked me to come.Apparently the Prophet is coming

Gran:unamanga,he is always busy.He couldn't make it the last time he was supposed to come?

Me:is he good?

Gran:God is using that boy in a marvelous way.

To be honest I don't know who they are talking about.All I hear is the prophet.They won't give me a name.

I just smiled as I went to wash my plate.I wore my sandals and grabbed my phone.I walked to church.It is a big church in a tiny village but oh well.I arrived after 15 minutes.I saw Cynthia and Grace.My high school playmates.

Grace:Taylor good to see you.

Me:its been a long while guys like uh!

I said as I hugged the both of them.

Cynthia: Hope your voice is still perfect.

Me: I love my voice, it's always perfect thank you for asking.

Clara: Let's gather around and start practice. We have seven hours till the service starts and I want us to practice for only four so we can prep our souls and voices.

Clara is the leader of the Praise and Worship team.

First we had an hour of prayer followed by the first hour of practice. It was my turn now. The choir leader asked me to stand on the stage and to lead a worship song.

Me: I'm nervous.

Clara told me to be confident and that I'm doing it for God. When she said that..

Me: "You call me out upon the waters, the great unknown where feet may fail. And there I find you in the mysteries, in oceans deep. My faith will stand. And I will call upon your name. And keep my

head above the waves. When oceans rise...."(singing)

As I sang the song with my whole heart, I felt a cold light breeze and I swear I felt the heavens open. I carried on and I felt like I was in heaven worshipping with the angels.

I was oblivious to any noise as I gave it my all. Then I stopped all of a sudden and I heard clapping as a deep voice began to speak. My eyes were still closed. I let myself come back to earth as I slowly opened my eyes.

They widened as in front of me stood a tall young man who looked a bit older but less or so my age. He was a bit muscular if I might say and he was hot. Had a caramel complexion and dark almost black eyes and he was in front of me.

.

To be continued

[03/12, 07:12] Lynne: WDC

.

.

TAYLOR

The choir member were silent and the man smiled. He was quite a catch. Attractive if I may say. I tried to construct a sentence in my head as words failed me.

.

ZACK

I had arrived an hour ago and the pastor of the church had let me use his office. I was deep in prayer when I heard the voice. It was angelic and I knew that is why God wanted me to be in this place. I went inside the church and there she was. Bringing heaven on earth with her voice. What she didn't see was Angels, God's very own worship angels surrounding her and joining her soul capturing worship. The choir went quiet as she sang with a peace surrounding her.

At the moment she was looking at me and I just smiled. I'm not a man of many words these days.

I just looked at her as she fumbled with her words.

Her:Hi..I..uhm..

Me:you have a very nice voice.Keep it up!

.

With that I got off from the stage and walked back to the office to continue with prayer.It seems like I thirst for God each and everyday and its a feeling I marvel and enjoy.When it looked like I had only an hour till the service started I just drove to the B&B to get ready to talk to God's people.

.

TAYLOR

I don't know what happened earlier on.His presence was too much I couldn't utter a full sentence let alone proper words.

When he left the whole choir looked at me.He said my voice was good.J ust good nje!

Anyways I didn't put it into heart and when practising I made sure not to get too carried away by the spirit of the Lord.Hallelujah!

After practise I walked homw with Grace and Cynthia.

Grace:you are really blessed.

Me:with what?that a hot guy complimented my voice?He didn't actually he said its good.

I said as I rolled my eyes.

My two friends chuckled as they shook their heads.When I got home mama was asleep.I had a quick shower and I wore my long below the knees pencil blue skirt with a white shirt.I put my heels in my bag along with the Bible,phone and notepad to take notes.

I can't wait to meet the prophet.

.

I was in church and it was full man.I mean it was almost close to overflowing.Guess the scriptures are true.I was asked to be the one to lead the choir when the prophet comes.Truth is I want to see what God will be doing in this place tonight.

When the pastor announced that the Prophet was in

the building my heart thumped. This is the moment. I went to the stage and started to lead the choir in worship. The prophet walked in and what the f... God forgive my language.

He is the prophet, that handsome young hot man is thee prophet?

I continued to sing and he moved his gaze to me. He was so serious and he just faced the congregation.

He is Prophet Zachariah Katlego Zulu. Otherwise addressed as Prophet Zulu. Wow! I sat down when he instructed the choir to hush!

Prophet Zulu: Good evening and well I have long been invited to come minister and by the Grace of God I came.

The church clapped their hands.

Prophet Zulu: before I start I would like an interpreter please.

The pastor's interpreter stood up.

Prophet Zulu: I want to keep my message short and to the point. If you have got your Bibles with you I

would like everyone to open to the Book of John. First chapter and read the first verse for me.

Interpreter: NLT version my prophet.

He nodded.

Interpreter: In the beginning the Word already existed. The Word was with God and the Word was God.

Prophet Zulu: and my message for today is The Beginning. Hope I have everyone's attention.

The whole church was silent and only his voice was audible and it is so so so so deep. Like intimidating and serious kind of deep.

Prophet Zulu: Let me break down this verse for you. Everything has a beginning. And according to the scriptures there was the Word. Let me make reference that when we go back to Genesis when the world was created God spoke a word and light appeared. You can find it in Genesis chapter 1 where God brought everything into being. Moving on this shows that before any action takes place a word was spoken. Something was said for that certain

thing to unfold into the natural. Those troubles you are going through today a word was spoken. It might be you or someone else but I put my money on it and you will find out a word was spoken. To make reference to this certain revelation and to affirm it lets open our Bibles to Proverbs 18 verse 21.

Interpreter: the tongue can bring death or life, those who love to talk will reap the consequences.

ProphetZulu: and what does the tongue do? it speaks a word. Whatever we manifest brethren it shall surely come to pass. Lets skip to verse 4.

Interpreter: The Word gave life to everything and his life brought light to everyone.

ProphetZulu: and the Word we have now shifted to is the Word of God. Brethren all this time you've been in need of a man of God to speak a Word into your life. The word that brings life. To speak a blessing. Are you getting me somebody?

The people clapped their hands loudly. This man is deep and serious jho!!

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 07:13] Lynne: WDC

.

02

Continued

.

"You're amazing.

You make my life feel brand new.

All your promises are here. And amen!

He's not a man that he would lie.

Jesus you love me too much(oh)

Too much(oh)

Too much of excess love(oh)"

Mercy Chiniwe-Excess Love

.

TAYLOR

He revealed more powerful deep stuff as he went much deeper with his teaching. It was so deep that I was stunned to be honest.

No wonder the choir went quiet when he came by practice earlier on. He be here only for today and God thank you that I came here. Then he instructed a worship song. I stood on my feet and sang Covenant keeping God by Victoria Orenze.

Me: "you'll never leave me, you said that you won't forsake me. You walk besides me and that is all that matters. The sun won't smite me and the moon it will not hurt me. The floods won't sweep me the Lord is my anchor. You are the covenant keeping God. You are the covenant keeping God." (singing)

This song just did it for me. The whole church was worshipping and the Prophet was on his knees worshipping our Creator. The atmosphere was thick with the presence of the Lord.

.

When worship was almost over, the Prophet just stood on his feet and walked to this very sick

woman in the congregation.He talked to her and we didn't hear what he said.The woman nodded with tears and he wiped them away with his thumb.Aaaaw!!

.

When the service was over,the Prophet left and well I really enjoyed the service.

Grace:and he spoke to you earlier on,you are really blessed Tay.

Cynthia:I would definitely not mind having a piece of him ggrrr..

Me:Cynthia behave,that man is an anointed man of God.

Cynthia:he looks just so yummy though.

She was whining now.

Me:Composure,composure mmhm know yourself.

I removed my heels and put them back into my bags.I put on my sandals.My feet were killing

me.Heels are no child's play.I walked home with the girls.

.

ZACK

Well,the service was so uplifting.It went better than what I had expected.The people were so consumed in the presence of the Lord and it made my heart to be filled with so much joy.

And the lead worshipper,her voice just brings heaven down to earth.She does not know it but she will soon discover it all on her own.The not so nice part is the ladies who wanted my attention.

Like women we are in the house of God,you don't just throw yourselves at His anointed servants.

.

SIX MONTHS LATER

.

TAYLOR

Well I passed with distinctions plus I graduated

from Stanford University. I am back in South Africa and at the moment I was now packing stuff into my three bedroomed house with the help of the movers. Well mama is still at the village and she is content there. She does not want to move in with me in the city. Says the city life is not for her but that's hokayyy....

After about hours we were done and I was still stunned that I'm actually going to start work on Monday. I'll be working at this very very big company and I was happy they hired me. I thank God I found work this fast.

I was dressed casually in my adidas tights, sport bra and a cardigan. South African weather is hot so don't say a thing.

I just wanted to get to know my neighbourhood a bit better so I just took a walk.

There are some really fancy houses and cars this side. Reminds me of the fact that I don't have a car but all in due time.

I studied the street so I don't get lost when directing a cab to my house. When I was satisfied I walked slowly while busy on my phone. Texting and stuff. I do have a social life and every girl's gotta have one obviously.

I bumped into something or let me rather say someone hard. Like it felt like I was bumping into a brick wall. My phone almost slipped but thank God I caught it. It's a damn iPhone and it's so freakin expensive if I break it now I might have to opt for a Samsung which I don't want.

"Sorry, I need to be a bit more careful"

That voice I know it. I've heard it somewhere before. I lifted my eyes and yoh! I almost got a heart attack, stroke and asthma attack all at the same time. Jesus father Lord! Why? why! why? Like this nah? Am I not your child. God!!

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:12] Lynne: WDC

.

03

.

TAYLOR

Why like this Lord? I'm half naked in front of your Prophet.

I just pulled my cardigan close.

ProphetZulu: Miss are you okay?

His deep voice though.

Me: I'm fine. Thank you.

With that I turned on my heel and walked far away from him. This is so embarrassing. He saw me wearing like that.

Wait! hold up! I live in the same hood as the Prophet? J ehovah!!

In Sixth Avenue in J o'burg with thee Prophet Zulu.

I walked as fast as I can to my house. I need to breath a little and digest what just happened.

.

.

ZACK

I bumped into that worshipper from about six months ago. The one with the beautiful voice that brings down heaven.

I just shook my head and jogged back to my house. I need to prepare myself for a trip to Mpumalanga with Vusi.

Its a whole month away from home but its worth it.

.

.

TAYLOR

I was just preparing myself for work. When I go out I will dress appropriately. I mean what if the Prophet saw me in shorts? thats inappropriate. He looked like he didn't remember me but he meets a lot of people

everyday so its nothing.

I was wearing my black skirt and I tucked in a white shirt. I wore pink heels. I took my handbag and all that.

I caught a cab that I asked to take me directly to the company.

I arrived the name is Bandile&Sons construction.

I'll be the architect but the place has style. Like its so stylish shem.

I made my way inside. I was given a quick tour of the building and the architect who made the plan of this buliding is good. It had five floors so it shows that its really big.

I was shown my small office in the third. It is small but it is something since it has a nice view to the outside and it has a bit of style. Wait till I'm done with it and you'll see.

A knock came through.

Me: come in.

It was a guy. He looks nice but Taylor ha wa tla go

fheba ka kwano so iketle.

Me:how can I help you sir?

He chuckled.

Guy:so formal Ms?

Me:Ms Radebe.

Guy:Let me introduce myself.

I just gave him the go ahead.

Guy:I'm J erome.

Me:nice to meet you J erome.

J er.and you are Ms?

Me:Taylor which is informal.

He smiled.

J er.just wanted to welcome you to the company.

Me:thank you.

That was thoughtful.

He left my office and I sat down on the chair.Tomorrow I need to start with work.So it mean

I have to come early to work to come pack my stuff and make this office feel like home.

.

.

JEROME

The new girl in the office is hot. She is though. Her voice is sweet too.

I never go for office affairs but her I would give the thing a try out. She looks so innocent.

Well I'm Jerome Mokwena. The COO of everything Bandile & Sons Construction company.

Well I continued with work.

.

Around five there was a light drizzle. These rains though. I decided to knock off. I went to the car park and unlocked my mercedes.

I drove out slowly and I stopped for a minute when I saw Taylor trying to catch a cab. Why should a pretty girl like her struggle to catch a cab. I stopped

in front of her and rolled down my window.

Me:Taylor is it safe to give you a ride home?

Tay:its okay sir.I will catch a cab.

Me:the rain might worsen.

Tay:its fine really.Like really.A cab might just stop now.

I looked around.

Me:I see no cab.

Tay:sir you don't have to.

Me:you can stop with the formalities now.We are outside the work place.

Tay:doesn't give me permission to call you by your nae though.I will stick to Sir.

Such stubbornness.Woman just get in the car before you get all soaking wet.

Me:I insist.I will take you home.And I won't take no for an answer.

Tay:since you insist.

She got in and sat at the back.I let her be.

Me:directions to your house.

She directed me and she went back to her phone.She was smiling on the phone.Does she have a boyfriend or is she married?no she's not married.I didn't see a ring on her finger.Plus she said she is Ms Radebe so she's not married.

Tay:you can stop right about there sir.

She lives in a stylish street.Most rich people live her and she lives here.

Me:you live here?

Tay:yep.Thank you so much for the ride.I appreciate it and I will be grateful.How can I repay you for your kindness?

Me:lunch wouldn't be bad.

Tay:I will pay just to thank you.

Me:you don't have to.

Tay:I want to.

Se got off and she slowly walked along the

street. She is smart. She didn't want me to drop her exactly where she lives. That's smart.

I reversed and made my way out of her hood. At least I scored a date with her. Though she doesn't see it as a date but I did.

.

.

UNEDITED

.

To Be Continued

[03/12, 08:27] Lynne: WDC

.

04

.

TAYLOR

I woke up really early the next morning. I packed a simple box of some nice stuff I could use to make my office look better.

I decided to wear my yellow pencil dress, red blazer and some blood red lipstick and wedges.

I looked killer today. I tied my hair into a high bun.

Perfect.

I took my laptop bag which had some sketch pads and essentials and obviously my laptop. I took my handbag also.

I managed to carry the stuff out and I caught a cab to work. At least today the sun is out. I hate it when people do favours for me.

I got to the office and I got in with my stuff.

I started to make my office look nice and welcoming. All that.

In an hour I was done. Now that's more like it.

I switched my laptop on and I checked my emails. I replied some and there was one about a staff meeting this morning.

I checked my watch and only ten minutes before the meeting starts.

I just stood up and made my way there. The other members of staff were there and when I walked in it became silent. O-k-a-y.

What just happened?

The room was silent till the HR manager walked in along with Mr Mokwena.

He smiled at me and I kept my straight face on.

The HR manager started introducing everyone. I was the last to be introduced.

"And I would like to welcome our newest member of staff Ms Taylor Radebe."

They clapped their hands and I smiled faintly.

Then we were dismissed. Time to work work.

I was assigned this client. To create his dream house. So imma pull an all nighter on this one.

Its my first and I want to make an impression.

I walked back to my office and well took out my sketch book and the works.

Jerome then walked in my office without

knocking.Arrogant enough.

J er:Ms Radebe.

Me:Mr Mokwena.What can I do to help you?is there a dream house on the way?or some renovations or extensions to do?

J er:still so formal.

Me:we are at a work environment.

J er:and you look dashing today.

Me:was that supposed to be a compliment?

J er:ouch!

Me:I was asking nje.

J er:yes it was.

Me:very well.Thank you.Can I please get back to work sir?

J er:fine.

He left my office.Then I have to go out for lunch with him.

Around 11 my client walked in.

Me:Mrs Mokebe welcome.

Her:thank you and nice office.

Me:thank you Mrs.Mind taking a seat?

Her:sure.

She sat down.

Me:so.Your dream house.Tell me about it.

Her:well I want something classic and stylish.It should be child friendly of course but scream elegance from a distance.

Me:I see.A three storey?

Her:isn't that a bit too much?

Me:let me explain it to you why I suggested that.

.

.

Bam!and she signed.A two million dollar home and I get to work on the plan and blue print and the interior decor.

Tay you need a pat in the back baby girl.For your

second day at work.

I checked the time. Why did I promise the guy lunch again?

I took a lift to the fourth floor. Apparently not everyone is allowed on the fifth floor. The boss isn't there. So only a handful of people are allowed up.

I knocked on his door.

J er: Ms Radebe.

Me: Mr Mokwena. If you're busy I can cancel the lunch.

J er: not so fast. I'm game.

Me: hokay.

We left the office and well the restaurant was a walkable distance from the office.

J er: did we really have to walk?

I chuckled.

Me: stop being a snob. Walking is a good exercise.

J er: says someone who lives in a fancy street.

I rolled my eyes. The house is nice.

We sat down and made our order.

Jer: so Taylor tell me about you.

Me: there is nothing to tell really.

Jer: really?

Me: yass! I'm your average good girl who goes to church. Only child and is working her dream job.

Jer: is that all?

I laughed.

Me: yes. And you?

Jer: whosh! I come from one large family.

Me: that must be nice.

Jer: it is until family reunions come and I'm always single or heartbroken and my cousins flaunt their beautiful wives kodwa I'm not the only single one though.

He smiled.

Me: really?

J er:yeah!my cousin has been a player.Well used to.Same difference.Still no girl by his side.

Me:thats sad.

J er:for me?not really.We are close like really close until of recent but its nothing.

Me:thats nice.I always wondered how it is to have cousins or siblings for that matter.Do you have siblings?

J er:yep.

Our order came.

J er:three actually.

Me:wow!thats nice.

J er.but they are annoying.

I laughed.

Me:people with siblings always say that.

J er:yeah!But Taylor you are beautiful I applaud your parents.

I smiled.

Me:I'll tell mom that you applaud her works.

He chuckled.

The lunch was nice to be honest and easy going.

Jer:I do hope you are not making this the last.

I gave him one mean look before laughing.

Me:you being such an easy going guy makes it hard for me to say no.I think our lunch break is over.

Jer:thats a pity.It was nice having to eat lunch with you.You shouldn't have paid.

Me:I wanted to.

Jer:you are so stubborn you know that?

Me:trust me I know and I've got an earful regarding tht behaviour.

We were walking to the office.

Jer:you must've been a naughty child.

I shrugged.

Me:it depends on the situation.

He chuckled.

J er:then I'm afraid to ask.

I laughed.

.

.

To be continued

[03/12, 08:27] Lynne: WDC

.

05

.

A MONTH LATER

.

TAYLOR

J ero was in my office.

I had been thinking about this the whole night.

J er:so whats your answer?Cause I need one.

Me:urg!I thought about it and my mind yoh!

J er:is it a yes or no.

I shrugged.

Me:its worth a shot.

He smiled and I did too.

J er:thank you for giving me a chance.

Me:and don't make me regret now go.I have work.

J er.my pleasure my lady.

I laughed.J erome!J erome!J erome!

I got on with my sketches and blue prints.Work has been hectic here at the office and I have been juggling my social life and work.

Ok.I just agreed to date J erome.Like how is Tay supposed to get married without dating?

J erome is not my first.I told my mom no boys but I once dated a guy or two in campus but of course I'm a good girl.My cookies are still reserved for marriage.Sex before marriage is a sin vhele.

.

.

.

ZACK

Feels so good to be back in town after a whole month. I have been getting these vivid visions. I couldn't quite see her face as of yet. But I was just rubbing her tummy and it looked she was pregnant.

I snapped out of my thoughts as I came face to face with Rose. She's an Angel. If you would've seen the things that happened when I was refusing this calling to be a Prophet you wouldn't believe.

Me: Rose.

Rose: Zachariah.

She calls me by my full name.

Me: why can't I see her face?

Rose: It's not yet time blessed.

Me: when will it be time?

Rose: remember God's timing is not our timing. Yes you have a description of some qualities she will be having. But the heavens deemed it not yet time to

reveal her to you.

I sighed.

Me:it's fine I'll wait.

Rose:stay blessed.

And she disappeared.At first I was scared of Angels but I got used to it.Sometimes Rose doesn't come alone but its pretty normal for me.

.

.

I changed clothes and wore my formal outfit.Time to pay the office a visit.I run dad's company and my other two companies.

I did study civil engineering so dad said I can manage his company.

When I was done I just decided to take the Range Rover.I got the keys and my briefcase.

.

I arrived then I just took the elevator straight to the fifth floor.

My PA just gave me some necessary updates before I requested the accounts and financials.

I did look at them and wow this month business was doing extremely well. The company's net worth was worth millions and it was very pleasing.

My phone rang.

Me:Lindiwe.

Mom:so I'm no longer mom?

Me:mom how have you been?

Mom:You no longer call Zach and I don't care if you're prophet I can still whip you.

I chuckled.

Me:yes Queen.

She laughed.

Mom:when will you be passing here?

Me:uhm,I just got back so after a week or two or maybe next month during the family get together.

Mom:its so far.

Me:I will be staying for a week so you have to be patient.

Mom:okay my child.

Me:say hi to dad and Kelets o for me.

Mom:will do,what about your brother?

Me:I talk to him everyday so why would I send my greetings?Bye mom.I have to go.

Mom:byee!!

I hung up and got on with work.

.

.

.

TAYLOR

It was around seven.People long left and so did Jerome.I said we will do breakfast in the morning.

I packed my stuff and took my handbag.I'm saving up my money for a car.Like maybe a J eep Grand Cherokee?

Its big and I like it.

I got in the elevator and I got busy on my phone.

I missed out a lot. Apparently Cynthia is getting married and she just mess aged me to be her bridesmaid.

Thats nice on her part and I'm very happy for her.

I got out of the elevator and I bumped into someone. Kanti why do I keep bumping into people?

This time the most unfortunate thing happened. My iphone fell. Like my iphone fell down and cracked its screen. Like its so expensive and all that.

I bent down to pick it up along with the few documents that fell.

The person that I bumped into also bent down to help me pick my stuff up.

I couldn't quite see his face.

He stood up and I looked up.

Oh God! not again.

ProphetZulu: sorry Ms for my clumsiness.

His voice!!!

Me:its okay.I gotta go.

I dashed out of the building as fast as I can.

God why am I always embarassed by being so clumsy in front of your servant?

I caught a cab that took me home.When I got there I just changed clothes and continued working while sipping on a cup of hot cocoa.

It helps me think at times.

Next time I will look where I'm going.

.

.

UNEDITED

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:28] Lynne: WDC

.

06

.

TAYLOR

Me:don't we need to get to work?

J er:we still have about an hour.

Me:sounds like forever.

He chuckled.

J er:are you always this serious?

Me:I thought by now you get me.

J er:I do.I just want you to los en up a bit.

Me:with time I will.

J er:since we do know a lot more about each other
how about dinner tomorrow night?

Me:tomorrow is a Frida.Finally.I'll get ready.I
promis e.

J er:pinky swear.

I removed my pinky.

Me:pinky swear.

This takes me back to my childhood days with Cynthia and Grace.

He drove me to work.Like he picks me up on Thursdays to and from work.I don't want him picking me up everyday and I think I like him.

He is chilled and laid back.I don't want someone who is too much.

But then this is a relationship and we need to set boundaries.I have boundaries and honestly they shouldn't be crossed by anybody.

Anyway as soon as I arrived at work questions flooded in my mind.

What was the prophet doing here yesterday?hai!

Le ena he seems to be everywhere.I bump into him every single time.

God!plus I attend church.I'm not on the praise team or anything.I'm just a normal church member who always listens to the word.I still call and send money home to my mother.

Cause honestly she is all I have.

.

.

ZACK

I think most of us as spiritual and physical beings we need to reach a level whereby the Word is in us.

In most case we never touch our Bibles except when going to church. We never make heartfelt prayers to God. Some can even fake prayer in church just so they seem like a prayer warrior.

That is so wrong in the house of the Lord. Your walk with God is a personal decision you should take just as you accepted him as your Lord and Savior. Prayer must be the foundation our lives are built on. There is no such thing as a useless prayer. No matter how long it takes God will answer your prayer. As long as there is a man to pray and a God in heaven to listen you shall surely get your answer. Another thing that should be addressed is that we put ourselves before God but yet still run to Him when the going gets tough.

Yes.His thoughts are not our thoughts and I agree.

But at some point we also need to put more effort into our spiritual lives.Put God first.Let him be the good shepherd of your life as he says in His Word.Trust Him.

Earth is not our home.Eventually we all die at some point.

All the riches that you made god over your life will remain with those in earth while you answer for your sins in heaven.

Is it right child of God?

Is it still right that you live like a sinner and yet you say J esus is Lord.

What are you telling the people?that you are a joke?that J esus is a joke?

No!no!no!Order must be put in place in the kingdom of God.

.

.

Thats what I was thinking about.I was a bit unsettled,I know that whatever is happening the Good Lord knows but I think it will hit him hard and every bit of faith and trust he had in God will vanish.

Rose appeared.

Rose:blessed.

Me:Rose,don't you think this is punishment enough?

Rose:he chose to deny us and our existence.Its not my hand of vengeance upon his life.Its the Lord's.

Me:but will he survive?

Rose:he needs to go back.Back to where it all started.

I sighed.God!

Rose:be blessed.

And she disappeared.I think I need to call Vusi.

Me:Vusi.

Vusi:Zack,I was just about to call you.

Me:you know?

Vusi:I do.But he honestly knows what to do.

Me:for his wife's sake I hope William does the right thing or he is screwed for life.

Vusi:yeah!I need to go.We'll talk.

I hung up.This issue was stressing me.

.

.

JEROME

Well Taylor is one fine lady.I'm so happy she agreed to date me.She is a difficult nut to crack but I finally did it.

I wanted her and I got her.

I think I'm starting to develop feelings for her so early in the relationship.

I wasn't supposed to but I can't help myself.She is just too pure hearted and lovely.I hope by the time I introduce her to the family they will like her.

Jerome slow down.You are even thinking of introducing her to the family?

Thats a bit too early.

I continued with work before I went to her office to pick her up.

I always take her pick and take eher home every Thursday and Friday.

Its nice cause we get to sing along to her favourite tunes in the car and her angelic voice is to die for.

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:28] Lynne: WDC

.

07

.

TAYLOR

Well I was with J erome in town today.

I was shopping and he offered to join me.I dunno why but hey!J erome will always be J erome.

J er:I wish to see you wearing that piece on of these days.

It was some damn sexy lingerie.Don't get me wrong.I have a few pieces that I wear just to make myself feel sexy but I'm still a virgin -_- till marriage.

I just touched his cheek.

Me:baby boy you'll see me wearing that after a long time.

J ero:and why is that?

Me:well..we'll talk about it babe.

I said and I continued to shop whatever I'm shopping.

.

When we were done we went to have some lunch.

J ero:and what did you mean by that comment earlier?

I rolled my eyes.And why the hell is he angry?

Me:can we not do this in a public place like this and we enjoy our food like normal couples do.

He just gave me a stare and we ate in silence. I hate childish tendencies honestly. I hate them. I just do. We are two grown adults here like hello?

He paid and we left.

The drive back to my house was silent.

He stopped the car in front of the house.

Jerome: can we talk now?

Me: of course.

I said with a smile.

Me: well it's still early in the relationship and honestly I have no intention of sleeping with you.

Jerome: it's still early I understand.

Me: you are not getting me are you?

I sighed.

Me: I'm still a virgin.

I'm quite proud to still say that at the almost age of 23.

Me: and I am christian that you know. I grew up

knowing sex before marriage is a sin.I still believe that cause believe me,sex is way too spiritual than physical.

His jaw was agape.

Me:i think its wise you close your mouth.

J ero:how am I supposed to survive??

I laughed like really laughed.

Me:I don't know but you are never getting some or whatever you people call sex these days.I'm still sealed for my future husband and if you can't deal with that then I'm afraid I will have to let you go.

.

.

J EROME

Wow!all these effort for nothing?

But I never give up do I?

Me:we'll talk more tomorrow.

Tay:if you say so but I'm not changing my mind

Jerome. I think it's best you know that and understand it.

I nodded.

She got out of the car with her bags and stuff.

I waited for her to get inside before I drove off.

I want Taylor and I'm not the kind of guy to give up just because of a minor setback. Nooooo!

Let Jerome do his thing and the sealed cookie? I will be the first one to taste it before her future husband.

She just thinks she is better but anyway. I'll let it slide and work on using my charm on her.

.

.

ZACK

I was at the palace.

Me: Mom.

Mom: and he now comes? hai suka.

I laughed. My mom has a lot of unnecessary drama.

Me:I'm here now ain't I?

Dad came downstairs.

Dad:Katlego.

Me:baba.Guys where is Kelets o?

Mom:as usual she went out with her friends for shopping.That child Nkosiyaam!!

I chuckled.Kelets o is quite a witty child.

Me:when she comes back I will be in my room.

I said as I went with my bag up the stairs.I will be staying over for the weekend.I will come back in a months time for that family thing we always host each and every year.It is fun and its tradition.

.

Dad walked in.

Dad:still no luck?

I shook my head as my dad laughed.

Dad:anyway your brother J ohn is getting married.

Me:and he didn't tell me...where is he?

Dad:he will be coming here later tonight along with his fiancée.

Me:thats nice besides he's the oldest among the three of us.

Dad:and the most hard headed child I've ever seen.

Me:let me get some rest,I will wake up a bit later.

.

.

.

TAYLOR

Well I was in my short pyjamas and a silk gown on top having some ice cream while watching a movie.

There was a doodr knock.Its late what if its a serial killer?

Me:who is it?

"Taylor its me"

Me:ooh!coming J erome.

I tied my gown and went to open the door.

J ero:no hey.

Me:what are you doing this late?come inside.

He came inside and I offered my couch.

J ero:I came to a decison.

Me:and?

J ero:its okay Taylor.Its okay we won't be having sex.We'll see if this relationship we have will go somewhere.

Me:oh my word!!thank you for unders tanding.Thank you.

J ero:you are more that welcome babe.

He stood up and came to place a soft kiss on my forehead.

Me:you're leaving?

J ero:yes,just came to tell you that.Goodnight beautiful.

He left.At least he understands.

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:28] Lynne: WDC

.

MINI(I'm still so busy)

.

ZACK

I was just sleeping and I had a vision.It felt so real.

I was just calling her.

vision

Me:so babe what are you thinking about?

Her:I didn't think it would end like this.You know.We survived.

I was rubbing her feet.

Me:yes my priness we survived.

Her:I love you Zack.

I chuckled.

Me:I love you Tshepi.

She giggled.

Her:you know I feel so weird when people call me by that name.

Me:I know.So the future?

Her:we'll see.As long as I'm with you and we keep on fighting this spiritually then I'm good.

Me:did I tell you that I love you woman?

She giggled.

Her:you did Mr Zulu ro should I say Prophet Zulu.

When she says Prophet its just a turn on.

Me:let me say it again nana.

She giggled again.Her and her giggles though.

Me:I love you a lot and I can finally say you're the rib I've been looking for.

Her:and you are my flesh.I was a mess and you fixed me.

Me:I love you ok.

She laughed.

Her:Zack stop it,its becoming cheesy.

.

.

When I was about to see her face I woke up.The vision felt so real though.

Kelets o being her just waltzed in my room without knocking.

Me:People have privacy Kele.

Kele:ps sh!you are still fully clothed angithi bab'prophet.

This one has a smart mouth.She's 18.

Me:Kelets o.

Kele:thats my name.I missed you gosh.

She just hugged me and I hugged her back.

Me:And I didn't miss you baby girl.

Kele:I love how protective you are of me you know?

Me:I know,thats why you won't let go.

Kele:you look troubled though.

Me:I'm not,you're seeing things.

She moved her head.

Kele:like angels?yeah I'm definitely seeing things so imma shut up and enjoy this hug while it lasts.

My sister has a lot of drama though but I love her.

When we broke the hug after a pretty long time she started laughing.

Me:and whats so funny?

Kele:oh nothing,come let me show you something.

And just like that she pulled my hand as we got out of the room.

.

.

To be continued.

I promised three but the third one might be early morning or we'll see.

[03/12, 08:29] Lynne: WDC

.

08

.

A MONTH LATER

.

TAYLOR

Me:J ero I don't know.I shouldn't.Its too early.

J ero:Taylor babe please.

Me:your family might hate me.

J ero:its a simple family get together.We'll leave early.

Me:no,you need to bond with your family.

J ero:okay,lets do this.We'll go together and we'll come back.

Me:driving at night again?

J ero:please,I want you to meet them.

Me:fine.We'll leave tonight then and come back tomorrow night.

J ero:thank you babe.You're a star.

Me:I know darling.

I said as I kissed his cheek.

He left my office.Apparently Prophet Zulu is the CEO of this company.

I was surprised and well I need to stop being clumsy and bumping into him.

I got on with work and by the end of the day J ero came to pick me up.He said his family reunion thingy is tomorrow.Akere tomorrow is a Saturday so we are going.I'm nervous.

We haven't been dating for too long and he already wants to introduce me to his family.

He is fast.

I packed the last of my stuff.Its not anything though.I just packed into my overnight bag.I was nervous.

I went to the lounge with my stuff.

Me:I'm done.

J ero:you sure?

Me:yep.

J ero:then lets go babe.

He got out first and I switched off all the lights and locked the door including the front door.

.

.

It was a three hour drive to his village.

J ero:I didn't quite exactly tell you this.

Me:what?

J ero:well my family.I'm royalty.

Yoh!!So they are these royal snobs who hate commoners.I don't even know my damn parents and they'll just accept me.

Me:take me home.

Jerome: Taylor I will not.

Me: why? I don't belong in your class.

Jerome: Taylor my family is okay. They won't hate you at all.

Me: these things you never know.

He parked the car at some local B&B.

Me: we are not sharing a room.

I said as we walked inside.

Jerome: If you say so Taylor.

Me: I know so, now book two single rooms.

He did so and we were given the keys to the rooms.

Immediately when I got inside I just went on my knees and prayed.

After that prayer I closed my eyes and slept. Jerome said we are going there around mid morning and since we're booked into individual rooms its not even necessary that he drives us back to Jo'Burg late at night.

.

.

In the morning I had a bath and I wore my white long summer dress. I wore my gold gladiators and I just tied my maroon weave into a nice bun. I look nice. oh! I do hope it looks appropriate though. I would hate it if everyone despises me there.

I just took my small bag and phone.

My bag has cash just in case and phone I never leave it anywhere.

I got out and bumped into Jerome.

Jerome: morning beautiful.

He said as he pulled me to him and indulged my lips into a warm kiss.

Me: morning handsome. So early in the morning though.

Jerome: you look ravishing.

Me: thank you. You look better.

He laughed and held his chest.

J ero:ouch!that hurt.

Me:get over it.Will we be having breakfast here?

J ero:no,not really.We are going to the palace.

Me:oh!

J ero:you don't look pleased at all.Talk to me Taylor.

Me:I didn't expect to meet your family so soon.

J ero:they are good people babe.Trust me.They'll fall madly in love with you.

Me:I'll just believe what you say.

.

.

We arrived at the palace and its huge.Like really huge and so beautiful.I saw people setting up stuff.This family must be big.

I just held tightly onto J erome's hand.

J ero:relax babe they don't bite.

We walked in as the security let us in.

J erome was leading the way and we arrived at the

dining room apparently. Already there are so many people. I can't breath.

Jerome smiled and let my hand go.

Jerome: family.

Girl: mxm, Jerome. You like making grand entrances shem.

Jerome: Kelets o I'm older than you.

Kele: whatever. who is she? she is beautiful. She doesn't suit you cuz to be honest.

She said sipping on her juice and she gave Jerome a look which had Jerome laughing.

Jerome: whatever Kelets o. Everyone I would like for you to meet my girlfriend Taylor.

Lady: hello child.

Lady2: Taylor hmm..hello.

Guy: nice to meet you.

There were a lot of hellos and nice to meet you.

I sat down and the food was served.

"Sorry I'm late I woke up....."

That voice.

I looked up.The Prophet is related to J erome who I'm dating.

There was silence before J erome cleared his throat.

J ero:cuz.

ProphetZulu:J ero my man.How've you been?

He said as he sat down next to J erome.I was sitting opposite to J erome by the way.

J ero:been there.Meet my girlfriend Taylor.

The prophe laughed.

ProphetZulu:finally he brings a girl home.Settle down man.We want a wedding.

J ero:chill please.I heard J ohn is getting married.

Kele:and he's coming over with his cute cute girlfriend.Oh she is such a beauty.Can I ask where do you get these amazing girls?

Lady:Kelets o!!

Kele:mom I just want to know though.

.

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:29] Lynne: WDC

.

08

Continued

.

TAYLOR

People were talking around the table and I felt left out a bit so I was silent the whole time unless I answered a question.

Kele:So Taylor what did you study?

Me:architecture and interior design.

Kele:wow!you're smart.

Me:thank you.What are you studying?

Kele:I wanted to study acturial sciences but I went for medicine under the dentisry side.

Me:Thats nice.

J ero:she's a smart one this one.

I chuckled and my eyes met with that of the prophet so I looked down again.

The breakfast was over and Kelets o offered to give me a tour of the whole palace.

Kele:I talk a lot but between you and me,I think you're too good for my cousin.

I just looked at her confused.

Kele:don't get me wrong y'all make a cute couple but I'm just not feeling it.Maybe its me.Let me show you the garden.

We walked to the garden.

Me:wow!its so pretty.

Kele:yep.

Me:but why do you say that?

Kele:I love my cousin but something doesn't feel right.You and him aren't a match.He usually goes for the wild girls.

Thats new information.

Kele:like those who are free spirited and ratchet.And well you aren't non of that Taylor so thats why I feel you and him aren't suited for each other but you seem cool.In your own lane.

I chuckled.

Me:you talk a lot for an apparent 18 year old.

Kele:I know.I bring a bit of extra sunshine to this family.Taylor even if you break up with my cousin I would like to keep contact with you though.

Me:thats nice.

She passed me her phone.

Kele:facebook name and whatsapp dials.

I typed in my digits and my facebook name.

Kele:your surname is Radebe?

Me:yes,anything wrong?

She just shook her head.

Kele:no,nothing at all.

We walked around this huge ass garden.The Zulu royal house is so regal and nice.But I can't seem to get what Kelets o said out of my mind.Maybe I'm reading too much into what she said.

We continued with our tour of the house.

.

After a few hours people started arriving and it looked like it was going to be packed.

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:30] Lynne: WDC

.

09

.

TAYLOR

Around noon people were already arriving and Jerome was by my side.

J ero:Taylor are you ok?

Me:uhm yeah!why?

J ero:you seem off.

Me:I'm fine.J ust nervous.

J ero:don't be.

I smiled a bit at him before he left me all alone.

Well I met a few people and bruh this family is so big.

J erome came back.

J ero:I would like you to meet someone

Me:okay.

J ero:Taylor meet my mother,mother meet Taylor.

I extended my hand and she just looked at me like I'm nothing.

Her:hmm.So this is Taylor.Such low standards.

Ouch!!

She walked away.

Jerome: Taylor is always like that she will get used to you.

Me: is fine.

He walked up to his mother and I just sat down at the far end of this large table. I feel so left out and lonely. I shouldn't have agreed to all of this. I should've been wise. This was too early to meet his family when we aren't even sure he might marry me.

.

.

ZACK

I was talking to mom and Taylor, Jerome's girlfriend was sitting at the far end of the table alone.

Mom: that girl is too good for Jerome.

Me: I agree. I might be a prophet but my cousin won't listen to me. He is still a player.

Mom: true, true. Let's see where this will go but I hope

the poor girl isn't hurt in the process.

Me:me too.

Mom:she is quite a stunner.

Me:knowing Sphe she probably looked down upon her.

Mom:you know your aunt very well.She thinks she's Mrs High and Mighty.

Me:and pride comes before the fall.

Mom:exactly.J erome's mom though.

Me:who happens to be Sphe,who is dad's sister.Who like things.

Mom:thats too much hau!!come lets grab some orange juice.

Me:sure.Plus I want to meet J ohn and his fianee.

Mom:you will,lets go.

She pulled me by the arm.This Taylor.Hmmm.

.

.

TAYLOR

Things were ok.

It was around past three in the afternoon and the lunch was delish.I felt left out so I wanted to go.

I just went to look for J erome.

I didn't find him.Then I heard the deep voice behind me.

Zack:looking for something?

Gosh!the deepness of that voice though.Its in every girl's dreams but Taylor control yourself.He's a prophet and cousin to your boyfriend.

I turned and smiled a little.

Me:actually yes.

Zack:anything I can help with?

Me:I'm looking for J erome and I can't find him.

Zack:let me help you look for him.Stay here.

He left.

Yoh!My heart was beating loudly in my chest all this

while and I released the breath I've been holding. He's intimidating and he was talking to me like a normal person. Of course he's normal. Urg!! let me shut up.

He came back with no Jerome.

Zack: unfortunately Jerome is nowhere to be seen.

Me: oh! it's okay. I wonder where he disappeared to.

The prophet chuckled and it was so deep. Urg!

Zack: you can just enjoy the food.

Me: yeah! maybe.

I said as I took out my phone now. I was bored no lie.

The prophet left and I got busy on my social media to even notice that Jerome came back from wherever he's been hiding.

Jero: I heard you were looking for me?

Me: apparently yes.

Jero: why?

Me: you can drop me off at the B&B and then come

back.I feel left out.

J ero:if thats what you want then so be it.

I took my stuff and said bye to Kele and we left to go to the B&B.

He did drop me off and left.I just let him be.Besides thats his family for crying out loud.

I just had a bath and I got undercovers.Tomorrow we are going back to the city.

.

.

Early morning I wake up and I just get busy on my phone.This 18 year old child of theirs likes things a tad too much.I swear she sounds like a 24 year old and looks like a 16 year old.Kele bathong!!

After about an hour J erome got in my room.

J ero:you done?

Me:yep.

J ero:alrights let me go have a shower.I will be back.
He left the room.

I continued with my chats from whatsapp.

When he came back he was squeaky clean and we checked out of the B&B after paying.I offered to pay for my own room.I can't have J erome paying for things I actually have money for.

Then we left.The drive to the city was silent.I was busy on my phone and J erome would steal a few glances of me here and there.

We arrived after a few hours then of course I just had to eat something in my own apartment.

J ero:guess I will be seeing you later?

Me:yes of course.Bye!!

He left and I started to clean the house.It was not that dirty but still.

Then I called mama.We talked for an hour then Kele called and we talked for an hour too.

By the time I finally sat down I was so exhausted.

Remind me not to gatecrash anyone's family events guys.

I just locked all doors and went to sleep on my own bed. Just a quick nap.

.

.

I woke up around nine and there was a knock on the door. Who could that be. I went to the door and it was Jerome.

Me: hey.

Jerome: I've been knocking for the past hour.

Me: sorry. I was asleep come in.

He came in and I closed the door.

When I turned to him he immediately attacked my lips with a kiss. I just held his shoulders for support but then I broke it.

Me: what's wrong? that kiss seemed tense.

His eyes were small.

He just said nothing and kissed me again.Ok. Whats going on now?

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:30] Lynne: WDC

.

10

.

TAYLOR

i stopped J erome.

Me:whats wrong?you seem tense.Sit down so that we can talk.

J ero:Taylor I don't want to talk dammit.

He shouted.

Me:we seriously need to talk.Clearly something is bothering you.

J ero:and she is ignoring the obvious.

Me:whats obvious?

J erome moved a few steps closer to me since I had kind of moved away from him.

I was cornered into the wall and he smiled.He wasn't drunk or anything.Whats going?somebody tell me.

Me:J erome whats wrong?

He chuckled.

J ero:you are so beautiful you know that?

He said as he moved his hand across my cheek.

Me:yes I know.Can we talk please!!

J ero:we don't have to talk sweetheart.

Me:whats going on?

He just kept brushing his thumb on my cheek.I was still backed up into a corner.

He kissed me and I responded.The kiss was not the normal kiss.

I finally moved a bit away from him.

Jerome: Taylor I'm a man and I have needs.

Me: I gave you a choice didn't I?

I said as he backed away.

Me: You had a choice to leave and move to the next best thing after me but nooo! you decided to stay so Jerome stay the hell away from me.

Jerome: Taylor.....

.

.

To be continued around 1700hrs.

[03/12, 08:30] Lynne: WDC

[APOLOGY INSERT, THE ONE THAT WAS SUPPOSED TO BE POSTED ON SUNDAY]

10

Continued

.

TAYLOR

He moved a step closer and grabbed my hand aggressively.

Me: Fuck!! Jerome let my hand go.

Jerome: Taylor I will have you.

My eyes were wide open. Oh no!! no!

Me: please!! let me go. You can go fuck a stripper or something let me go!!

Jerome: As if. I wanted you from the day you first walked in and you pretend to be a christian busy saying sex before marriage is a sin. Bitch what if you are lying and not a virgin?

Tears flowed. I should've read the signs. He was too good to be true. Stupid me. But there is no time for that. I have to escape. I have to leave and go far far away from here. I NEED to call the police.

I breathed in and when I tried to forcefully remove my hand from his grip he slapped me. I'm light in complexion imagine how red and bruising my skin is becoming

And when my other hand moved to my cheek he

just forcefully teared my shirt.

Me: Jerome don't. We can end this silently and go our separate ways. Don't force yourself on me..

I was crying.

Jerome: Bitch shut the hell up. This will be so enjoyable. What's so precious about your virginity?

I sobbed as he forcefully tried to remove my pyjama pants and I just tried to push his hands away. He was so strong.

Jerome: I wouldn't do that if I were you.

I just said a silent prayer in my mind and I don't know where the strength came from but I managed to like remove myself from his grip.

I ran to the door only to get pulled down to the floor by my hair.

When did he get here so fast?

This is torture.

Jerome: you want this the hard way I see.

He was smiling. This ain't the guy I dated. This was a

monster in the flesh. He removed his jeans and he smiled.

Jerome: finally I will have a taste of how it feels to be inside Taylor Radebe. Bitch!!

He spat on my face. I felt so disgusted and my tears weren't ending. Where is God? I need Him as in now!!

I serve God! where is He??

I cried as Jerome was on top of me. His whole heavy weight on me and my eyes scanned the room. I tried to push him off but that just earned me a strong grip on my neck and more than five slaps on both of my cheeks. It stung and it was so painful. I held my lips and they felt bruised.

Me: Jerome don't do this to me. Don't...

He just forcefully took off my pants. His hands just slowly rubbed my thighs.

Jerome: so that's what you have been hiding? so ripe. Only for me. Just for me.

Me: Jerome we can change our minds please don't.

J ero:and she's wearing some black lace.You just know how to drive a guy crazy Taylor you know that?

I shivered.This is not right?where is God?

He just moved his hands up and I closed my eyes as tears flowed down.

His hands just stopped midway.

He moved them to my breasts and he squeezed them as I cried even more loudly and sorrowfully.

J ero:bitch shut the hell up.Don't act as if you ain't enjoying all of this.

No guy has ever touched me like that before and this is torture.

I can't.I need to find a way to get him off me.

He just moved his hands over my body and I felt his hands inside my underwear.

I cried more.This is defiling my body and there is nothing I can do.

J ero:the texture is nice.Why the hell aren't you wet for me?

That earned me a punch. Why do I have to endure this?

He ripped the underwear off.

I gasped and cried more.

Jerome: get ready cause this pot of honey looks delicious.

I immediately tried to push him off as he forcefully tried to hold my hands up. I will not lose my virginity to some lunatic man!!

I finally like bit his hand which grabbed his attention. I was bruising.

I pushed him away and he wanted to grab me. I don't care if I'm naked. I can't lose my innocence to him.....

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:31] Lynne: WDC

.

.

"And don't take this personal.

But you're the worst, you know what you've done to me.

And although it hurts, I just can't keep running away"

The Worst-J hene Aiko

.

TAYLOR

He was gunning for me. I grabbed a vase and I don't know why I didn't use it before and I just hit him on the head.

It broke on his head and he staggered and now I didn't know what to do.

He fell after a few seconds. I just picked up my gown and wore it very fast. He looked like he was going to wake up so I went to the kitchen and I got out a butcher's knife.

He is a monster. He deserves nothing but hell itself.

His special place in hell should be 2000 times hotter so he can pay for all his sins.

As I got out I felt my arm being held.

Me:don't you dare.

Jerro:you thought a vse was going to finish me off?

I screamed and I just stabbed him with the knife.

He had a surprised look before he held his chest area.

He fell with his eyes closing.

He is dead?he can't die,he needs to go to jail.

Thixo!!

I slapped his cheeks.

Me:you bastard wake the fuck up.You need to go to jail and serve a life sentence don't die.

But it was self defence right?

I just ran out of the house and went to my neighbour's house.

She opened the remote controlled gate and she almost fainted when she saw me.

Me:Emma...the police.Call them.

Emma:what happened?Taylor?what happened to you?

I couldn't utter a word.She just went to her landline and called the police and an ambulance for me apparently and she brought me a blanket and a warm cup of tea.

Emma:drink this,it will help calm your nerves in the meantime.

I could no longer cry.I was numb.

Maybe I'm inhumane or something but I just couldn't feel sorry for myself or Jerome.

Is he dead?I don't know.

Will God forgive me?I don't know either.

I just drank the coffee till I heard the sirens and I knew the police had arrived.

Its time to put on a show.

I stood up and removed the blanket.

The police knocked on Emma's door and she opened for them.

She talked with them for a while before she let them in and they went straight to me.

Him:I'm Detective Roberts and I'm with my partners Wilson and Caleb.

I just nodded.

Roberts:can you talk mam?

Me:uhm yes.

I didn't show any emotion and I was still feeling numb.

I narrated them the whole story and Wilson went to my house.

Caleb:Ms Taylor how can you be so calm when you should be shaking and crying which is what most women who have been almost raped do?

I just shrugged my shoulders.

The police escorted me out of Emma's house and I

thanked her for her generosity.

Officer Caleb just kept looking at me.

Me:is there anything you want to say?

Caleb:no.

Me:and to answer your earlier question I just don't know how to feel.

These scars and cuts and bruises are real.

He just looked ahead.

I was in the police car and we never went to my house.Apparently it was now a police scene.Don't really know whats going to be happening.

Well I was taken to the hospital for tests and stuff.I just don't know if I'm cold or what but I do hope Jerome is dead.

Even if he is not in jail.I wish he is dead.

Dr:well mam apart from your nose bleed,bruises all over your body and eyes.And the cuts you will be fine in like two weeks.

I nodded.I had no clothes beside that gown and

since my house is now a crime scene or whatever they call it on these crime shows,I'm practically just me without a thing or a dime.

Then after the doctor gave me pills and all,the officers of the law drove me to the police station and guess who interviewed me yet again.

Detective Roberts.

Roberts:Ms Radebe.

Me:detective.

Roberts:so can you narrate what happened again?

I did so the second time.

Roberts:how strange that you said the exact story twice without blinking.

I just looked into his eyes.

Me:are you suspecting foul play?is J erome dead?

Roberts:no,he almost died.Right now he is in ICU fighting for the life you almost took away from him.

Me:it was self defence he was going to rape me.

Roberts:isn't he your boyfriend?

Me:whaat?

I don't know why I lost it.

Me:boyfriend or no boyfriend he was not supposed to rape me.We had agreed that I will not have sexual intercourse before marriage and now that he felt like it I should have let him rape me?wow!!goo for Mr law.You wanted him to rape me and move on cause he's my boyfriend?

Roberts:Ms Ra...

Me:noo!!I will not be defiled.Right now women in our country are not safe because you guys are doing a lazy job of protecting them and if you are accusing me of attempted murder then do as you wish.Innocent people are always arrested anyway.

He sighed and he left me in the interrogation room.

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:31] Lynne: WDC

[valentines week insert]

12

.

TAYLOR

I was emotionless as they took me to one of their holding cells. I was alone in the cell and it was my first time ever being in a prison cell. Life has a way of bringing you down.

I just decided to sleep on that thin mattress since I had no choice. It was terrible as my dreams were haunted by Jerome actually raping me in my dreams.

When I finally opened my eyes I was sweating and my heart rate was going crazy. I think that is going to be my life for the next coming weeks if not months.

I looked around the room and it was still dark.

I never really liked the dark when I was young. I would always cry to mama and tell her that there is a monster under my bed and it wants to take me with it.

She used to think I was crazy but that's what I actually felt. And it was crazy that I rarely slept alone in my bedroom.

I closed my eyes once more but life isn't all rainbows and ponies and my dreams taunted my soul even deeper. This time when I woke up tears were streaming down my cheeks and my body was shaking uncontrollably. It took me thirty minutes to finally gain my composure and it went still and cold.

I wished I had never dated Jerome. Now look at where I am.

An hour later a policeman came to open the cell for me and escorted me to the interrogation room where I saw detective Roberts.

Roberts: Good morning Ms Radebe.

He had a smirk on his face which I wished I could wipe off with a hot slap on his cheek.

Me:whats so good about this morning?

He kept quiet as I took my seat next to him.I'm not a criminal so I was not handcuffed.

Roberts:Ms Radebe can I have your statement once more.

I rolled my eyes and told him the whole story again.

He shook his head.

Roberts:your statement is still the same.

Me:because thats what actually happened.

Roberts:are you sure that this was not all planned.

I chuckled and looked him straight in the eye.

Me:So if it was your daughter would you second guess her like that?you want to let an abuser walk free on the streets?are these bruises not enough evidence?those torn clothes in my living room are they not evidence?or do you think I beat myself up again?Look at my knuckles nothing but if you can

go check Jerome's knuckles you can see that he was beating up someone and that person was me. Just because I'm somebody else's daughter doesn't mean I don't have rights. Yet you people are the ones who are supposed to take care of the people. How when almost all of you are corrupt? maybe the reason you are defending that monster so much is because you know him isn't that right?

Roberts: Ms....

He stuttered. I thought so.

Me: I thought so. I hope you will be happy when this happens to your daughter and the perpetrator walks away scot free. when will I be released from this dungeon?

He kept silent for a few minutes before he finally spoke.

Roberts: a police officer will drive you to your house.

I nodded and he packed his files and left.

A police officer arrived and I took all my stuff, the

pills which I was forced to leave at the counter.I decided to sit at the back.I honestly don't want any male next to me.

When I got to my house I begged them to let me take my stuff in the bedroom.

A police officer escorted me and I just took my mini suitcase and packed some of my hoodies,underwear,sweatpants,caps,beanies,shoes and all my gadgets.

I took my other bag where I packed my documents and everything that I can't live without.

I looked at my Bible and I was about to take it when I decided to rather not.

I asked for privacy and the police officer left.I changed clothes and wore my black sweatpants and hoodie with my black timbers.

I walked out with my bags and caught a cab.

.

KELETSO

I heard what happened as Sphe,J erome's mom

called us. Now it's all over the media and I honestly believe Taylor's story. Jerome is capable of doing such.

I called Zack.

Me: Zack.

Zack: Kelz

Me: Have you heard anything about Taylor?

Zack: No nothing and at the moment there are journalists crowding our street.

Me: Is she at her place?

Zack: No it's only just the police.

Me: That hectic huh?

Zack: Yep. Jerome just caused some damage on the poor child.

Me: True. I long knew he was too good for her now look what happened. And who told the media anyway.

Zack: Guess who?

Me:Sphe.

Zack:yep.Anyway I have to go.I have a sermon to get ready for.

Me:alrights love you.Bye.

I hung up and decided to call Taylor but her phone went to voicemail.I left more than five voicemessages.

.

TAYLOR

"..taylor,its Kelets o.I just wanted to know how you holding up.If you want someone to talk to I'm her for you"

I was listening to her seventh voice message.I just took the phone in the hotel room and decided why not order some whiskey?there is a first time for everything.I just want to numb all this pain thats eating me up.

I might even quit my job,Its not even worth it.I'm not worth it.I feel cheap,like I'm a whore and a slut.

Is life worth living?I'm not really needed and it might

just be one less person for Got to take care of and
He has been silent.

[03/12, 08:32] Lynne: WDC

{last week's insert}

13

.

TAYLOR

The order arrived and the waiter had brought a label
I don't know. I'm new in this alcohol thing anyway.

The short glass is the one for whiskey right? I see
this in movies. I poured it and added some ice cubes.

I took the first sip and I spit it out.

Hei! This thing is too strong but let me grow a spine
and drink qha. The strongest will numb the pain.

I took another sip and it was a bit better but still
bitter.

I sipped and sipped. Had a refill and another one.

My vision was blurry and ish and I blacked out.

.

.

ZACK

I got a call from Sphe.

Me:aunty.

Sphe:he's awake.

Me:I hope he tells the truth.

Sphe:he's innocent.

Me:and looks can be deceiving.Bye.

I hung up.I don't need these J erome stuff.How will people be able to work with him in the office.I called dad.

Me:baba.

Dad:Zachariah.

Me:what should I do about J erome?

Dad:I trust your judgements.What you do will be for the best.

Me:thank you dad,how's mom?

Dad:he is still the same.

Me:tell her I said hi.Bye.

I hung up and fixed up some of the company documents,signed what needed signing and I think its almost twelve.Time for prayer.

.

.

TAYLOR

I opened my eyes and the sun hit my eyes.And my head.Yoh!!the most fortunate thing is I didn't have a nightmare.Thats a huge relief.

I just took a shower and wore my grey sweatpants and hoodie and socks.

I called room service for some headache pills and breakfast.If I will eat anyway.

While I was waiting for room service I just decided to check my social media and what I saw crushed me.

"GOLDDIGGER CRIES RAPE"

"HUNGRY FOR MONEY THAT MUCH?"

"NOBODY ACTING LIKE A VICTIM"

My hand shook as the phone fell. My pictures were all over the media. This can't be happening. My reputation is ruined.

I just checked for the whiskey bottle and there was still more than half left. I poured it in the glass and downed the whole cup before I took out my laptop with my hand still shaking. What if mama believes this? She will think I came here to whore.

I sat crosslegged on the floor and types a resignation letter. How will I face the office staff? maybe they will say I cried rape cause I wanted a promotion.

All of this is a big fat mess.

After typeing the letter and making sure its sent I called mama.

It rang once, twice before she picked up.

Me: ma...mm...a

Mama: Tshepi whats wrong? why are you stuttering?

Me:I know I let you down but it was never my intention and all.I..just...

Mama:stop speaking in riddles my child whats wrong?

Me:I was almost raped.

My heart skipped a beat as there was silence.

Me:mama...mom..

Mama:I...Ts...

Then the line went dead.Oh my God!!what did I just do?I disappointed her.

I was pacing up and down when the door bell rang.Must be the waiter,I let him in and I tipped him.Now how do I get out of here unnoticed?

At night.I need to check out late at night.

For the time being I poured myself some whiskey and drank it along with the headache pills.

I felt okay.I think.But the pain is still there not that hurting though.

I'm slowly numbing it.

My phone rang and it was mama.I answered.

Me:Hello?mama..

Speaker:its Mam'Thembu the neighbour.

Me:Mam'Thembu how are you?

Mam'Thembu:not so good.Your grandma just had a heart attack and I asked my son to start the car so I can take her to hospital.

My heart beat stopped.So I caused her heart attack?she has been so good to me and I do this to her.

Me:I will be coming there.

I need to check out now.

I packed my bags as fast as I can and I dragged them down to the reception where I checked out.I was wearing my beanie and I had my hoodie on top so I'm not recognisable.I know I look tomboyish but its okay.I don't want to be noticed.My face is still a mess.The bruises are still visible since I have thin skin also.

....

KELETSO

I'm worried about Taylor honestly and no one knows where she is. At her apartment She is not there. I asked Zack to go check and he said its only the police.

The other bad news I received is that Jerome is alive. Mxm! that bitch ass nigga deserved to die honestly.

Mom: what are you thinking about?

She interrupted my thoughts and I snapped out of it.

Me: nothing.

Mom: it can't be nothing, you have a worried look on your face.

Me: I wonder what Taylor is going through. She must be broken. The poor soul.

Mom: God will heal her broken heart.

Me: I hope so.

.

.

A WEEK LATER

Taylor explained everything to her mom and she understood but noticed a couple of changes in Taylor.

Her mom noticed that she is no longer that fit, she rarely eats the food she is given and she is always locked up in her room.

At night she hears her screams and cries and everytime she comforts her, Taylor would be smelling of alcohol.

She asked Taylor about it and she said its nothing.

.

TAYLOR

I found a really good tattoo artist. I heard tattoos can be great therapy.

I brushed my teeth and I had some milks hake to get rid of the hangover. I told mom I'm going somewhere. My bruises healed and I need to get rid of the scars though my soul is scarred for life.

.

.

To be continued.

[03/12, 08:33] Lynne: WDC

.

14

.

TAYLOR

I saw the needles and stuff. Trust me it all looked a bit scary but I need to grow a backbone.

I asked the tattoo artist to just make a tattoo at the back of my neck of a cross.

He took about thirty minutes and I personally made sure he sterilised all the needles and equipment he will be using. Its better to be safe than sorry.

After he was done I paid him and wore my hoodie.

Surprisingly it was kind of nice when he was making the tattoo. The pricks of the needles were

like some sort of therapy but I think I will pass. I don't want to be an ink lover.

I took a taxi back home.

When I opened the door I started thinking, is alcohol really worth it?

Jerome has already ruined my reputation and now how can I face the crowds?

They will always see me as this whore and now they will see me as an addict.

Is it all really worth it?

Maybe when the alcohol fails to numb the pain I might turn to something stronger like cocaine.

Do I really want to be a drug addict? I need to grow up and be a woman. But the tattoo is nice that's for sure. That's one thing I don't regret at all.

Well I found mama sitting on the sofa. She looked sad.

Me: mama what's wrong?

Mama: I feel like I'm losing you Taylor.

Me:I'm still here I'm not going anywhere.

Mama:I know but I feel like my little sweet girl is slowly dying.

I just stared blankly at her.Honestly I don't know how to respond to that so I just slowly walked out and went to my bedroom.

I took out all the whiskey and wine bottles out and poured all the alcohol down the toilet.

I found a plastic bag and put the empty bottles inside there.

But I'm gonna miss my white dry wine gosh!

But I guess its for the best.

After emptying and cleaning my room I guess I will have to find another way to deal with the pain and the nightmares and shit.

Damn Jerome.

.

.

JEROME

That bitch really did a number on me. The knife almost went to my heart.

She was trying by all means to kill me I see.

Mom was besides me and I told her a different version of events and knowing mom she believed me and said we will get justice.

Apparently Taylor was nowhere to be seen.

The police are not really that concerned because she has not crossed the borders so that means she is still in the countr. The court date is two weeks from now and I have a really great lawyer by my side.

One of the best really. So I'm sure I'm gonna win this case.

.

.

ZACK

I was in my office talking to Will who was as always

stressed about his wife's health.

Will:she just isn't getting better.

Me:as time goes on she will.Stop stressing.Plus I have a favour to ask.

Will:o-k-a-y.

Me:well you do know about the rape case my cousin has gotten himself into?

Will:whoa Zack slow down.If you want me to represent Jerome I can't.He hurt an innocent woman and he might shift the case to make it work in his favour.

Me:I know and I also know he's not innocent.That was not what I was asking you to do.I want you or your wife to represent Taylor.

He blinked his eyes in surprise.

Will:Mr Prophet,if I wasn't married I would think that you have developed feelings for the girl.

I just shook my head.

Me:Will I'm just trying to help her out jeez.Not

everything revolves around women you know.

He smirked.

Will:just saying.Know what I will talk to Cammy and see if she will take the case.She needs something to do anyways rather than sitting at home wallowing in her despair.

Me:thank you.I owe you one.

Will:sure you do.

After Will left I called Kelets o.

She answered on the third ring.

Me:sis,look I have a favour to ask.

Kele:jsut know that you owe me big bro.Okay ask.

Me:can you send me Taylor's number?

Kele:why?

Me:just send the number and I will tell you afterwards.

Kele:okay.Let me hang up and send it to you.Bye.

A minute later I got the number.

I just saved it and I decided to call. I know that she doesn't have mine so its an unknown number to her.

She answered.

Tay:hello.

Me:Hello am I speaking to Taylor?

Tay:yes. Who am I speaking to?

There was silence for a bit.

Tay:no wait....I've heard this before. Its Prophet Zulu right? where did you get my number?

So much for respect.

Me:form somewhere.

Tay:what do you want?

You could tell she already hates our family because of one fool called J erome.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:33] Lynne: WDC

.

15

.

TAYLOR

So wait Mr Zulu called me?this better be good.

Me:what do you want?

Zack:thats awfully rude.

Me:and we aren't talking about my manners now are we?I asked a simple question and I'm expecting a simple answer.

He sighed at his end.I really want nothing to do with the Mokwena's and Zulus or anything associated with them.

Zack:would it be so bad that I want to help you.

Me:as in help me lose the case against your cousin?

Zack:Taylor would you stop being rude and sarcastic just for a minute.I know what Jerome did to you was wrong and I honestly don't condone his behaviour thats why I want to help you.

Me:is that pity talking?I honestly don't want people's sympathy.

Zack:okay.I got a pretty good lawyer for you though.And if you change your mind you can call me Taylor.Bye.

And he hung up.

I honestly don't want anyone related to J erome close to me.

Mama you used to say that I'm Radebe and we don't despair we find solutions and are warriors.

I just combed my hair.It was a curly afro.I look like mama only a bit.She has never at all talked about my dad.I wonder why.

Maybe he hurt her in some way so its not my place to ask really.

I tied my hair into a puff and the tattoo on my neck made it look all sod amn sexy.I smiled a bit.

Its December and my december has never been so gloomy.

I made my way to the lounge.

Me:mama.

Mama:Tshepi.

I smiled a bit.

Mama:its good to see you smiling.

Me:yeah.Can I ask a question?

Mama:ok go ahead.

Me:did I ever see my father in a certain point of my life?

Mama looked away.Guess this must be painful for her.

Me:you don't have to answer that.I totally get it.

I said with tears in my eyes.When other teenagers used to talk about being daddy's girls I never said a thing cause I had no father.

And I wonder where all of this comes from.

I stood up and mama spoke.I stopped in my tracks.

Mama:he never even knew you existed.

Thats crushed my whole world into pieces.

Mama:it was for the best Taylor.Come sit down.

I went to sit next to her and she held my hand.

Mama:your name Taylor means to tailor.You were tailored for a special reason and thats why you never knew your father.And baby we trust you so much hence your name Tshepang.

Me:we?

Mama:me and God.

I nodded.

Mama:trust me my child you are better off without your father.

I nodded.

Mama:I promise you that its all worth it and I will support you in everything.

I nodded and just laid my head on her chest as she stroked my cheek.

Guess I will have to trust my mom's judgement.

Thirty minutes later I just stood up to go and cook.

I made some beef stew and pap.

.

.

I was so chilled in the house and kill me but I had a bottle of my favourite white wine.

I wasn't a drunkard. I still had those nightmares but I just cried at night and during the day I went on as normal.

My phone rang. Another unknown number oh great!!

I answered and it turned out it was Mrs Camilla Sokhulo. Thee Mrs Sokhulo. Thee best female lawyer and she wants to meet me. I agreed and it means I need to go back to J o'burg.

And do something about my hair. But I know how to DIY it though.

As long as my gels and sprays are with me then I will get the effect that I want.

I told mama and she said its okay.

Wait after this meeting with Camilla then I need to

find myself a lawyer because the case is fast approaching.

I just went to pack my bags and I will be taking the bus to J o'burg in the afternoon so that early evening I can book myself into a hotel.

Camilla did send me an adress.

.

.

Finally arrived in J ozi and it was around 7.I just booked myself into a hotel for three days.

We are meeting the day after tomorrow.Plus I think I left a few stuff at my place.I hope the police are done with their investigations.

I will check out the place tomorrow.

When I got to my room I just immediately slept only to wake up at 12 midnight.

I was sweating.Its an everyday thing.These nightmares are so real.And in them J erome is really

raping me and I always scream and he punches me saying I'm worthless and no one will marry damaged goods. He was doing me a favour.

And at times I do believe that. Besides I don't want any male species close to me. Otherwise I might go into attack mode.

I had a glass of wine before I attempted sleep again.

When I woke up in the morning I had a shower and after that I styled my fro to be all frizzy and messed up and it was so pretty.

I wore my boyfriend jeans and an oversized blue adidas tee. I put on my beanie and I wore my black vans shoes.

I just took my phone and R200. Its not like I will be buying a lot of things.

I ordered breakfast which was just some muesli.

I ate all that. I had saved a lot of money and its not going to waste trust me.

I will look for a job three months after the case has ended. By that time most employers would have

forgotten it even existed.

Anyways I caught a cab to take me to where I used to stay.

There was no yellow tape.

I was just by the gate.Starring at the house.Brings back a lot of memories.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:33] Lynne: WDC

.

16

.

TAYLOR

I just opened the gate and went to unlock the door with my spare key.

When I walked through the door I was faced with that horrible sight.

The blood and the ripped clothes.It was all there.

I need to clean this.Or else the house will stink and the landlord won't like that would he?

I just went to the bathroom to grab some disinfectant,sponge.a bucket which I poured warm water in.

I went to my bedroom and it was still that clean.Some of my clothes were still in here.

I just undressed whatever I was wearing and I wore my old shorts and a vest.

Now lets get cleaning.

Me:Taylor you can do it.You can do it.

I breathed in and calmed myself down before starting the cleaning.

I switched on the tv just for some music.J ust so that I don't think about the reason I'm cleaning.

And little mix's touch was on.

That song makes me do some damn sexy crazy things mostly moves.

Me:just a touch of your love is enough to knock me

off my feet all week. Just a touch of your love. Just a touch of your love. Just a touch of your love is enough to take control of my whole body.

The way I was moving my body, I smiled as I was dancing. I should try to find something to keep my mind off things.

.

.

ZACK

Well I thought I saw someone enter Taylor's house.

I just went there and I just wish I didn't go cause what I saw just woke some dormant feelings in me.

It Taylor herself and what she was wearing and the way she was dancing. God!! Any man would do anything to have his woman dance like that for him. And it was how Taylor was dancing. Was she really a worshipper?

She didn't notice me at all. The song ended and when the next one started she danced along and it was better than the next time.

I should've knocked. I haven't been intimate with a woman for almost two years and right now Taylor..

I just stepped outside for some air. She didn't notice that I was by the door anyway.

I recollected myself. I knocked at the door.

I knocked louder and the music stopped.

Tay: who is it? wait there. Ngeza khona manje.

She came to the door two minutes later and she was wearing some sweatpants.

That's better but I can't erase what I saw can I?

I mean all that. Damn it Zack. I may be a prophet but I'm still human and it showed because my brain was sending signs to the part of my anatomy I wouldn't like to dwell on.

Tay: Zack!! Mr Zulu!

She snapped her fingers in my face.

Tay: snap out of it. O bewa ke eng fa?

Me: I thought it was a stranger who got inside your house.

Tay:now you see its not so you can go now.Bye.

Me:Taylor gahle.

Tay:ufunani gahle gahle Mr Zulu?I really don't care if you're a Prophet cause well....

She trailed off.

Me:But I really want to help you.

Tay:Zachariah tuu.Can I have a breather without any of you people breathing down my neck.Its like all you ever do is try to rape me then be all up in my face.Please I want to be rid of anything related to Jerome.And I do hope you saw my resignation.I didn't serve my notice due to unforeseen circumstances which everyone are aware of.

She was now so hard like she doesn't feel a thing.I just couldn't get past her.Its like I've been blocked from knowing her destiny or anything.I dunno why.With Taylor the heavens decided to block me.J ust great.

Tay:so Mr Prophet excuse me,I would like to clean my house in peace so you can go now.

I just left. Taylor doesn't want my help anyway.

She knows where to find me if she wants my help. I don't know why I want to help her so much but maybe it might be because I feel so guilty about what Jerome did to her.

He embarrassed the whole royal family. I bet baba he is angry but is acting all calm and Sphe is busy excusing his reckless behaviour.

.

.

TAYLOR

After cleaning the house it was squeaky clean. I don't think that I will be able to live in this house again. But I liked it though. Pity fate had to happen and I now hate it.

I just took some of my clothes into my small travel bag in the bedroom. I still have some of my clothes in the wardrobe but not now.

I took a cab to the hotel and went straight up to my room. I'm famished jho!

I just ordered some salad and some steak.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

[03/12, 08:34] Lynne: WDC

.

17

.

"When there is madness, when there is poison in
your head.

When the sadness leaves you broken in your bed.

I will hold you in the depths of your despair.

When it's all in the name of love."

In The Name Of Love-Martin Garrix & Bebe Rexha

.

TAYLOR

"Me: I love you okay?

I said as I held his hand. He just rubbed my tummy.

Me: I hope it's going to be a boy.

Him: I hope so to Taylor."

I woke up from my dream. That's strange. This is the first time I didn't have nightmares. Honestly.

And who the hell was I saying I love you too? I didn't even see the face.

As I poured my wine my hand just shook and the glass broke into pieces as it fell to the floor.

What the hell is wrong with you Taylor.

I checked the time.

It was around 3am. Wow!

I just didn't know what to do at this time.

I closed my eyes and just tried to get some sleep

.

I ended up falling asleep and I woke up around seven.

I had a shower and after that shower I just wore my

black dress and a cardigan along with my soviet sneakers.

I tied my hair into a tight bun and I applied some lipgloss.

First impressions do count right?

Yep. Thereafter I just took my handbag which had some money, my credit cards and some personal stuff.

I ordered breakfast which was a simple fruit salad.

After that I did final touchups to my looks.

Taylor be strong. Don't let the pain show.

Be strong.

I was chanting that as I got inside the cab and gave the driver the address I was given.

He dropped me off.

Me: thanks.

He nodded and I paid him.

Well I pressed the intercom and the lady who called

me answered.

Her:who is it?

Me:Taylor.

Her:oh!let me ask them to open for you.

Then the gate opened and there were some security guys and the cars parked here.Damn!!

I knocked and she answered the door.

To say I was shocked would be an understatement.I was completely blwon away by the interior before I noticed that she was in a wheelchair.

Now that stunned me.

Milla:I know that reaction and I don't want your sympathy.Come in.

I walked in and she wheeledherself to some room which looked like the dining room.I didn't know Mrs Sokhulo was wheelchair bound.I...

Milla:well Taylor.

Me:yes...

Milla:I wanted us to discuss your case.

My face changed.

Me:which case?

Milla:the J erome saga.That idiot was just taking chances.Are you in or not?

Me:well uhm..

Milla:Ms Radebe I don't have all day.I would like to represent you but it all depends on you.Besides I already agreed that I would handle this.So what do you say?

Me:uhm ok.

Milla:you sound so unsure?

Me:well I don't know why you're doing this?

Milla:well Zack asked.

Zack!Why couldn't he just...

Milla:you know him?

Me:well yeah!long story.

Milla:you don't look to happy.

Me:well..its complicated.But how much are the fees?

Milla:we'll have to discuss all that after winning this case.But I guarantee you that we will Taylor.We won't let this master roam the streets of South Africa.

Me:wow!

She chuckled.

Milla:whats so wow?

Me:well life,never in my wildest dreams did I think I would meet with the most bad ass female lawyer in the country.Mind my language.

Milla:destiny works in mysterious ways.

Well we did discuss the case and I asked for some water and she directed me to the kitchen.

I drank the water as my hands shook.They've been shaking for some very odd reason.

I don't know why I wanted to sing.Maybe its this serene environment.

Me:"I'm am guilty.Ashamed of what I've done.What

I've become. These hands are dirty. I dare not lift them up to the holy one. You plead my cause. You right my wrongs...."

"you break my chains. You overcome. You gave your life. To give me mine. You said that I am free. How can it be."

I turned and it was Camilla. Gosh she has a beautiful voice.

Milla: Your voice has that effect.

Ok! now I'm lost.

Me: what do you mean?

Milla: I don't know but it assures, calms, restores and brings peace to one's heart.

Me: that's a lot. I just sang a few lines. I should be complementing your voice. It's superb.

Milla: I think you have something special.

Me: O-k-a-y.

I am not going to dwell too much on that one.

We went back to the dining room and we discussed

the case some more.

After that I bid her goodbye.I promised to keep in contact.

When I went to the mall I just went to a quiet café for some coffee.

I decided to call Zack.I have to swallow my pride.

Me:hello.

He answered in one hella of a deep voice.

Me:Zack I wanted to apologise for bitting your head off yesterday and a few days ago.And I want to say thank you.

Zack:o-k.That was one long speech coming from you.Did it hurt your ego?

I swallowed.

Me:it killed my pride.But thank you for recommending Camilla to work on my case and she agreed.Thank you.Don't stress about the payments.I will pay foot the bill.

Zack:Taylor you don't have to do that.

Me:I just called to say thank you and don't worry about me any more.I'm fine.And this doesn't make us friends.Bye Mr Zulu.

And I hung up as my coffee order arrived along with some chelsea buns.

I had that before I took a cab to the hotel.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:34] Lynne: WDC

.

18

.

"I got a list of names and yours is in red underlined.I check it once.Then I check it twice."

Look What You Made Me Do-Taylor Swift

.

TAYLOR

I ordered my coffee alongside some cinnamon whirls.

It was almost noon but that didn't matter anyway.

I ate my meal in peace and after that I paid.

.

Upon my arrival at the hotel I just didn't know what to do with my time so I called mama.

Me:mommy dearest.

Mama:Taylor..

Me:how are you?

Mama:you sound better.

Me:I feel better I think.

Mama:thats good.But i wanted you to see a therapist ke.

Me:I'm fine.I don't need a stranger telling me how I feel.

Mama:its for your good.

Me:can we drop it please?

Mama:fine.

Me:thank you.

We talked and talked till I hung up.

I was still a bit full from my mini snack from the cafè so I just decided to sleep.

.

An hour later I woke up drenched from sweat.It felt like I had been running.Int he dream J erome was a now changed into a black dog that was chasing me.These nightmares are tormenting my soul.I can feel my soul leaving me bit by bit and I don't think I will be able to take it in the long run.

Even with him in pris on,the nightmares won't go away.

I just drank some water.I need a shower and a long one.Scratch that I need a long bath.I just need to soak in the water for some time.

I walked slowly to the bathroom and I started to run the water.

I went back to the bedroom and got out of my clothes.

Tomorrow I'm going back home. Christmas is on Friday and I need to spend some time with my mother.

I got to the bathroom and stopped the water.

I got inside and just went a bit down till my head almost went down deep underwater.

It seems peaceful this way. The warm water working on my nerves.

I slowly closed my eyes.

.

.

"I can't breath. I can't"

I rose up from the water. I almost drowned in a hotel bathtub. Not that I wanted to die but it would be better than this suffering. Its a cruel cruel world.

I got out of the water. I looked at myself in the mirror. I looked different. I don't know how but I

looked different.

I don't know what happened but I can feel something shifted in me.

Anyway maybe I'm being paranoid. I just wiped myself dry and I wore a long maxi white dress.

These days I don't want to wear anything tight. Rapists are everywhere and looking and I just can't expose my body like that.

I wore pumps and I just dried my hair and let it loose.

Let me just go have some dinner for once.

I walked down to the hotel restaurant and placed an order.

Nothing heavy. Just some steak, a salad, cheese rolls and some red wine.

I just looked at my phone. I wanted to check my social media accounts but it isn't a great idea.

But who cares anyway? Who am I kidding I care.

A woman came to stand in front of my table. I don't know her really but she looked like she was from royalty or something. She just had that kind of aura around her.

Her: You look familiar.

Me: me? I think you're mistaken.

Maybe she knows about me because of the tabloids. I was called a gold digging bitch if I remember correctly. Maybe that's where she saw me really.

Her: I'm not. You look like someone I know. I'm sure I have seen you somewhere.

Me: maybe you're confusing me with someone else.

Her: maybe. Maybe not. But I have seen you somewhere but I can't remember where. Anyway have a good evening miss.

With that she left.

Okay that was awkward. I don't know her. Now I definitely think she is confusing me with someone

else.

My order arrived and it was nice. This time my hand wasn't shaking and well the wine I had was nice. I paid for my meal and tipped the waiter.

As I stood up I saw a face that made my very soul die.

The monster himself. He was very happy as if he didn't even destroy me. He had some cheap girl by his side. I wonder who decides to date Jerome, a piece of work if you ask me. But oh I tell you. He is going to pay. Even if it's the last thing I do. I hate him with a passion. I felt my anger blaze inside of me. It was as if all I wanted was to see him suffer. Which I did. He just had to die. One way or another. The world would be better off without him.

He glanced in my direction. He looked startled for a moment and he masked it with a stern look.

I smiled at him. Oh he is so going to die. Call me evil but he needs to go. I wish he had died at the hospital really.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:34] Lynne: WDC

.

19

.

TAYLOR

Well I went back to my hotel room.

The next morning I checked out and took a bus back home.

.

.

To tell the truth Christmas was not like all christmases. It was too sad. Mama tried her best but it was honestly not the same.

Kelets o has been hitting up my phone and I ignore her calls. I don't want people around me. I don't need people.

It was a Monday and well I received a call from Camilla. She said she has work for me.

I checked out the pics she sent and I have never worked on such a huge building in all my design life but I will try honestly.

Kelets o called.

I finally answered.

Me: Taylor Radebe speaking how may I help you?

Kele: Hey Taylor, its me Kelets o.

Me: Kelets o.

There was silence for a while.

Kele: I just wanted to check up on you.

Me: I'm doing good. Thank you for your concern. I have to go.

Kele: oh! bye then. It was nice hearing from you.

I dropped the call.

People need to understand that I don't want anybody in my life. I just want to be left alone.

Anyway I went to my bedroom with my laptop and I saw that Cammy sent the blue prints of the building and its current interior state. I called her a while later.

Milla: Taylor, now is probably not a good time. We'll talk tomorrow how about that?

I wanted to ask her what's wrong because she sounded so stressed but I shouldn't butt into other people's businesses.

Me: it's okay. Bye.

I hung up.

Hmm. She sent an email that followed the pic that says she wants to turn this building into a children's home. Hmm.

Interesting. So what do children like? Obviously we need to change the paint, the lighting and a whole lotta stuff. Load in new child friendly furniture. Renovate the whole place. The design and renovation of the place is my baby. I don't know why she trusts me this much. And on Wednesday we're meeting. I'm going with my mother.

She's not that old hai, just a mere 43 years is not old.

Just that she lives in the village and well she likes acting like a gogo.

I mean she is always in a doek and long long dresses.

She is pretty. Trust me. She is my skin colour and we look alike. I need to do something. I have never seen her pictures when she was young. She must have been a stunner and she still is. Anyway I will worry about mama later.

At the moment I need to do my research. Its going to be a long long day.

Around 8 i was called for dinner.

Me: Mama this smells good.

Mom: just for you.

Me: I have a suggestion.

Mom: and that look Taylor I don't think I like it.

And then it hit. I don't use the same surname as my

mother.This is just getting too complicated.

Me:mom why aren't we using the same surname?

Mom:you're using your dad's surname now eat up baby.

She was avoiding the issue.

How come ena she is Kristina Stewart?

This raised a lot red flags but let me just push it aside for now.

Me:anyways mom?

Mom:mhm?

Me:how about a makeover?

Mom:Taylor nooo..I'm too old for that.

Me:I'm not taking no for an answer.

Mom:Taylor..

Me:shout at me but tomorrow you are going to have a makeover.Plus we're going to J o'burg.The case thing and all.

Mom:alright.

We ate and after that she forced me to pray with her.

We did but I was not feeling the prayer honestly.

Anyway I didn't tell my mother that.

In the morning I had a bath and I packed my bags.

I wore my black maxi dress and some white pumps. I tied my hair into a bun.

When I got out I bumped into mom.

Me:wow!

Mom:and the child was saying I need a makeover.

Me:I was wrong ke.

Urg!She looked so regal.Its like she was a princess of some sort.

She was wearing a white shirt and she tucked it in her black maxi skirt and she wore pumps.

Her hair was silky and black.It had no grey strands.She let it down and she has been hiding all of that from me.

She clicked her fingers.

Mom:Taylor stop day dreaming tuu.

Me:I'm not.You just look like a dream.

Mom:Pssh!just old me?

Me:old?you look 30 mom.

Mom:Taylor whatever.Are you ready to go?

Me:yep.

We went to the road stop and heads turned.My mom was a the center of attraction with the added fact that she never went outside if she did,she wore her gogo clothes.You could see she was beautiful but hai not like this.

We boarded the bus and we were on our way to J o'burg.I just realised that I actually don't know a lot about my mother to be honest.

She has raised me herself for 23 years and a few months and I don't know who my mother is.

Wow!Way to go Taylor.

Me:but mom lets pass by the shops and still do the makeover.

Mom:Taylor I don't want a makeover.

Me:pretty please.J ust for me.

Mom:fine.

She looked annoyed and I just laughed.

Me:I love you too mama.

Mom:I love you too baby.

She kissed my cheek.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:35] Lynne: WDC

.

20

.

TAYLOR

While we were in the bus she wore her doek and her granny glasses.

Me:why wear that?

She just ignored my question.

Oh well.

We arrived and well upon arrival to the mall she declined the makeover thing.

We booked into a hotel and well I just booked us into a B&B.

Me:let me go check on someone I will be back.

Mom:alright.

I left to go check Cammy.I can feel something is wrong somewhere somehow.

When I got there we sang and well I felt at peace too.She keeps going on on and on about how I have something special.I ignored that.

I went back to the hotel and mama was asleep.Okay.I got busy on my laptop and all.Helping Cammy with her project is a big deal and I feel like I made a really good friend.

Around 7 mom woke up.I asked her to go out for

dinner with me.

She had a shower and I showered after her.

She was tying her doek and I stopped her.

Me:you look beautiful like that.

Mom:Taylor.

Me:just this once.

Mom:fine.

She let her hair loose and she just wore a long white maxi dress.I wore my yellow dress with a small slit and the back and it was not tight.

We walked down the lobby and went to the hotel restaurant.

She felt uneasy.I tried to ignore it but she wanted us to sit at a far corner.Where no one can see us.

Uhu!go etsegalang fa?

Anyway we sat down and ordered.

I ordered wine and she was about to protest when the woman from last time who said I look familiar

came to our table. Is she stalking me or what?

Her: I knew it. Eva when did you come back?

Eva? who the fuck is Eva? I'm with Kristina here.

Her: I presume this is your daughter. You didn't tell me your daughter is this beautiful when we talked last week.

Kanti what the hell is happening?

Her: Eva? Eva?

Mom: You must be mistaken lady. My name is Kristina.

Mom said as she looked the lady straight in the eye.

Her: it's me Jada, the maid of honour at your wedding to Prince R...

Mom: I don't know a Jada.

Jada: what? Eva? Where is your...

Mom: lady would you please excuse me and my daughter please? I don't know a Eva nor have I met one. Have a good evening.

Jada looked at her stunned and left.

Me:mom who is Eva?

Mom:I don't know Eva.

She was icy cold.Kanti why am i in the dark?I have to know even if I have to force it out of her mouth.Kristina or Eva.Whatever the hell her name is.

We ate and even had dessert

we went to our hotel room.

I just walked in first and she followed.

Me:Who is Eva?

Mom:oh great not you again.Taylor just calm down.

Me:calm down?I don't know the woman who has been taking care of me all these years.I just recently discovered you are 43 and that you look so fuckin hot but all these years I thought you were old.What the hell is going on?I want to know and I refuse to be lied to.I don't even know who the hell I am.

Mom:sit down and calm down Taylor.

Me:sit down?for who?for the why?I want the truth.

I snapped.

Mom:and I didn't raise you to be disrespectful to your elders.I'm still your mother.

Me:mother?I thought I had no mom nor dad.

Mom:Taylor just sit the fuck down and listen to me and stop being a chatter box.

First time she swore at me and she wasn't at all using her sweet voice.

I sat down in seconds.

Mom:Good.

Me:talk.

She gave me a look before I murmured a sorry.Yoh!I have never seen her like this in my entire life.

She sat down.She faced the other way.

Mom:did you go through my stuff?

Me:I kinda did.

Mom:I figured.Well I hope you won't hate me for what I'm about to tell you because you might think

I'm selfish and all.

Me:it depends.

Mom:First of all I'm not Eva.Eva is my twin.

Wow!She has a twin?

Mom:My real name is Ava Elena Valencière.I am from a royal kingdom far away from South Africa...

She stopped and breathed in and out.Wait!what?

Mom:I'm from Avalore.You won't know it because its not that common but its counted as one of the kingdoms with a strong pure regals ever.We never marry people who are not royalty.Ever.It so happened that one day when I was 17,the royal kingdoms meeting was held at our castle and there was this young man.

She smiled.

Mom:I won't tell you his name because well knowing you,you're hot blooded and you will search for him

True though

Mom:I loved him.Like really loved him.He promised me marriage and like any naïvè princess I agreed.Our affair went on till I was 18.My twin Eva also liked him but she didn't know I was having an affair with him when he came for his occasional visits to the kingdom.She found out and Eva being her jealous wicked self she poisoned him against me

She paused as a tear fell

Mom:she married him a month later and I had discovered I was pregnant with his child.Well that child meaning you.The reason my sister took him from me was that well I was the choosen one.In our family there is always a healer.We heal with our voices and at birth I was graced with an amulet.For protection and a whole lot of stuff.

Yoh!!this is a lot to process.

Mom:can I continue the story tomorrow morning before breakfast?

I nodded.She slept.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:35] Lynne: WDC

.

20

CONTINUED

.

TAYLOR

Wow!Its a lot to process.I don't know how to feel at the moment.Should I be happy that I'm purely royal blood or should I be saddened by the fact that mom must hate her twin right now?

I closed my eyes only to open them later.I just couldn't sleep.At all.

Well around seven mom woke up and she went to the bathroom.

She came back a few minutes later.

Mom:let me continue before you ask a lot of questions.

This sounded all too painful for her.

Mom:the amulet right?Well you know I can sing and thats where our power to heal lies.I used to notice that you liked singing and in church people would be very touched by your singing,since you were in kindergarten.I knew you had inherited the gift.Well the amulet.It was for protection and something I discovered later.When I didn't wear it I looked a lot older and I used to remove it everytime I wanted to go to clubs back at Avalore.I know.When I used my savings and all to buy that small house,I started doing odd jobs.Like washing,cleaning and all that.J ust so you won't go home hungry.My parents don't know where I am till this day.They think I'm dead and its better that way.

Yoh!!

Mom:Taylor just stop bothering me with the questions.I said you had no mom or dad for your protection.I had to protect you from my sister.If she knew that I'm still alive she would kill me and you.She would've killed me if she knew I was pregnant by her husband whom she stole from me

and whom I won't give you his name.

Me:so he is a Radebe?

She nodded.

She wiped her tears.I understand now.

Me:I understand and I don't blame you at all.Its okay mom.I'm happy that I have a mom.

We hugged and I just let the tears flow.She is my mom.My mom is Ava.Thats nice.

We broke the hug.

Me:why are you still hiding till now?

Mom:they are still alive and as long as they are our lives are in danger.

Oooh!I get!I get!

But the court case will be public.The media will be there cause obviously royalty will be taken to court and its going to be big.

Me:I'm sorry.

Mom:what for?

Me:I kinda blew your cover.

Mom:the court thing?you didn't and maybe I should stop hiding.It happened years ago and you're all grown and all.

Me:but I still need you.

Mom:they won't take you away from me.I promise.

Me:pinky promise?

She laughed.

Mom:yes pinky promise sweetie.

So I get to flaunt my beautiful mom.Oh gosh!Think of the fun things we can do.

Me:the mall first.

Mom:was guessing you would say that.

We both had separate showers and she just tied her long hair into a bun.I let my bouncy fro loose.

She wore a long dress.

Me:do you even have curves?

Mom:don't even ask tuu.

Plus this is taking my mind of the J erome case.Phela that bastard has been creeping in my mind for a few weeks and I think its time to kick him to the curb.

I wore my black boyfriend dungaree and my vans sneakers.No makeup.

Me:we look like twins.

Mom:no.Not really.

.

.

KRISTINA

Well my real name is Ava and what I told Taylor is the truth.But honestly her royal name by birth should be Stella.I just didn't put it in the documents.I ran from home and I lived off my savings.My parents now think I'm dead.Its a good thing right.

At the moment we were at the mall.Do I have a degree?certificate?

I do.Its a degree in business management.I was

home schooled and obviously trained to run my dad's empire. My brother was to rule over the throne.

But here, it's difficult. Once the business booms obviously it would mean exposure.

We just went into a tiny café to have some coffee and chocolate muffins.

Tay: God no!

I glanced to where she was looking and I saw a fine young man who was the Prophet.

Me: and then?

Tay: I don't like him.

Me: I won't meddle.

Something is going on.

.

.

ZACK

The holidays were fine. The café I was in I saw Taylor and a woman who looked familiar. She

looked like someone I know from the Royal council.

But let me not read too much into it.

They looked happy and when they left I just saw the woman's face. She looked like Taylor and how could I miss it? How when the resemblance is there.

Could Taylor's mom be Queen Eva Astoria Radebe?

And the surnames match. Taylor is royalty? wow!!

That's shocking. How come she has never been introduced by the king and his lovely wife?

I only know of their twin daughters and their son. But not Taylor.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:45] Lynne: WDC

.

21

.

TAYLOR

Well we passed by Zack's table. He stopped me.

Me: Zack.

Zack: Taylor

And he greeted mom.

Zack: Queen Eva.

Oh no! the confusion again. Shit!

Mom: young man. It's Kristina. Ms Kristina Stewart.

Zack was confused.

Me: we gotta go.

And me and mom left.

Me: that was close.

Mom: the truth might get out eventually.

Me: but not now.

We bought some clothes and wherever me and mom went she turned heads.

We arrived at the hotel and it has been one hell of a day.

Mom:that was exhausting.

Me:tell me about it.I can't believe the year's about to end.

Mom:me too.

I had a shower first and she followed after me.

We had separate single beds.

Me:goodnight mom.

Mom:night.

With that we slept.

.

.

It was a friday.Court day.Court day!

I woke up first and had a shower.

For court I have to look formal.

I wore my dress.It was tight at the top till it reaches my waist and loose from thereon.It was fine.I wore

heels.

I tied my hair into a nice bun.

Mom woke up.

Me:morning and I'm almost done.

She smiled.

.

.

UNKNOWN

Him:I found them.They were seen all around town.

Me:them?

Him:yes.A young girl.

Me:hmm.Kill them.Both of them.

Him:of course.

I ended the call.Where the hell did she come from?

This is my worst nightmare.But it will all be sorted.In due time and I hope by the end of the

week this pesky little problem would've been gone.

I smiled.

.

.

TAYLOR

Mom looked so hot. We got in the cab. I have a bad feeling about this.

I whispered to mom.

She removed her amulet from her neck.

Mom: wear this.

Me: what about you?

Mom: I will be fine.

She searched her bag and took out a ring that had the same colour as the amulet.

Mom: don't ask Taylor.

I zipped my mouth.

The driver drove and we almost had an accident but thank God the driver swerved off the road on time.

Me:that was close.

She sighed.

We arrived in court and well well it was full and I saw that fool.Whats his name again?oh yeah Jerome.

I smiled.

I sat down and a few minutes later the queen of the show walked in.Camilla!

She looked killer today and oh well the Zulu royal fam was here too.Same old,same old.Came to support their upcoming rapist.

Cammy came to me.

I was so nervous.

Cammy:be fearless and remember what we discussed.

I nodded.

Me:and kill them on the stand.

Cammy:I will.

She walked away.

Mom:she's nice,she's your lawyer?

I nodded.

She just squeezed my hand.

Me:mom looks like your cover has been blown big time cause that royal family is staring at you.

She turned and King and Queen Zulu were looking at her.

Mom:baby after this we need to go.when this court case is over we need to go.

Me:where?

Mom:home.

Me:home as in?

Mom:Avalore.

Yoh!shit just got real thats for sure.

Anyway court started and well it was quite amusing to see Jerome lost for words on the stand.Camilla

was really good.

We are taking this one home.

After court I met up with Cammy and we talked and I hugged her.

As me and my mom were about to leave King and Queen Zulu approached us.

Oh no! I know mom looks like her twin geez.

Me: We are in a bit of a rush.

We need to go.

With that we left and went to where we are staying and locked ourselves inside the room.

Mom sat down gracefully.

Mom: sorry that I had to drag you in all of this.

Me: no, it's okay. We're in it together.

She smiled faintly before she stared at space. This must be hard on her and she is trying her best to be strong for me.

The following day we had court again and guess what?

You guessed it.

We won the case with Jerome getting a light sentence of two years in jail like bruh!

He needs more but its okay.

Me and Camilla went out to celebrate and it was so nice. I won the case all thanks to her wits and smarts. I really didn't deserve her.

Me and mom will have our mini celebration when the time comes.

Cammy: we won the case.

She was having juice. and I had wine. I know I have a gift but not now. Plus the nightmares are still there and I don't trust nobody at all. I don't want no male close to me.

I took a cab back to the hotel and mom was in the room going through her stuff.

I got a call from an anonymous number. That's strange. I answered. New year's day was fast approaching and mom said we are going back to KZN after new year to pack and we will go to Avalore. Scary. I know.

Me: Taylor Radebe speaking how may I help you?

Him: well I need you to do this one favour for me.

Me: okay.

I know that voice. I listened.

Me: consider it done. On the 31st right?

Him: yes. We will do it at midnight.

Me: sure

I hung up. This is going to be fun.

Me: mommy?

Mom: yes.

Me: I got something to plan, please help me add that princessy vibe?

Mom: of course.

I told her.

Mom:wow!thats wow!

Me:yeah!

Mom:you don't sound happy.

Me:I am,for them.But I don't want a man ever.

Mom:give it time.

Me:time can't heal my scarred heart.Even I can't heal it myself so I will die single and untouched.Maybe I should be a nun.That would be nice.

Mom:Taylor don't do that to yourself.

Me:whats done is done,nothing can change that.No one can heal my soul honestly.God?lets not talk about it.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

Morning <3

[03/12, 08:46] Lynne: When Destinies Collide{WDC}

.

22

.

ZACK

My parents were confused. That was Queen Eva right?

Mom: I'm confused.

Me: me too.

Dad: haul! couldn't you see it in the spirit?

Me: baba I only see what God reveals to me. What He doesn't reveal I don't see.

We just left the courtroom. Well Will had asked me to help him and his wife renew their vows. Obviously I agreed.

I would be going home after New Year's day.

.

.

TAYLOR

Me and Cammy's sister kept her busy just like her husband asked us to do.

Camilla ate a bit too much not that I was complaining.

I had invited mom to the ceremony too. Urg! this woman is gorgeous guys. She is perfect.

.

Well surprise surprise. Cammy was in tears almost the whole evening. Her man loves her. I agree on that one. She found the one for her. He makes her so happy and just singing for the special occasion was no biggie. Besides it was for a friend.

When everyone was now seated I decided to sing one of these cheesy love songs.

Me: This song goes out to the special couple in the room. The ones who brought us here today.

I sang love potion by Mafikizolo for the couple.

There was a lot of cooing and "aawws"

At the end everyone applauded my singing.

Mom:I need to hire you.

Me:I know.I'm the bomb,the ish!the star of singing,the..

Mom:don't get way over your head young lady.

Me:I had to try.

She laughed and we went to get us some food.God knows I missed eating way too much.

Me:mom does Avalore have a gym?and a trainer?

She nodded.

Awesome.Time for some self defence tactics.

Zack was here unfortunately.I don't have a ny beef with the Prophet but we don't vibe no more no.

He just stole glances at me and I ignored him anyway.He is also human though he sees things beyond us.

We left the party around 2am.It was so nice and I hugged Ella and Cammy goodbye.

Me and mom caught a cab to the place we're staying and we just slept.

I woke up around ten. I feel like I've been hit with a truck and my throat was raspy.

I woke mom up.

Me: mother, the bus. We have to go so that we can catch the evening flight on time.

She dragged her feet to the bathroom. Yoh!

.

.

At the airport all things were approved and it was time to board the flight.

Bye bye South Africa and hello Avalore.

On the flight I just slept on mom's shoulder.

Mom: I'll wake you up when we land.

I nodded.

.

.

AVA

Having to go back home brought back a lot of memories. Like the time I met Sanele before things started taking a turn for the worst. I don't understand the vendetta that Eva has against me honestly.

But I do hope my parents are willing to forgive me and welcome their grandchild. I looked at my sleeping princess.

She has been through a lot and I can tell that she is far from being healed. Maybe Avalore will do her some good.

Only ten minutes till the flight lands. We have been in the air for about ten hours.

It's that far.

I woke her up so that she could buckle up and she smiled and looked excited.

I wished I was that excited. My stomach started turning.

We went through customs and I caught a taxi. I asked

the driver to take us to the royal palace.

It was a twenty minute drive from the airport to the palace.

As we unloaded our bags Taylor was in awe.

Tay:mom its beautiful.

Me:I know babe.

I paid the driver and there were guards and well with royalty protocol has to be observed.I told them my fake name and well it took about ten minutes till they opened the gate and we got in.

The royal guards at the door also followed the same protocol until we were both escorted to where the king normally see the commoners.

The castle was still so ever magnificent but there were a few changes here and there.

The guards opened the door to that particular room and Taylor and I bowed.

King:stand on your feet.What can the king assist you with?

I lifted my eyes and he almost had a heart attack.

He whispered something to the maid who got out of the room in a jiffy.

Me:Sean.

Sean:Eva?

I chuckled.They must've thought I was dead.

Me:no dear brother.

Sean:it can't be,she died twenty three years ago.

Me:its me Ava in the flesh.

As he was still processing the information dad walked in.He knew how to differentiate Eva and I.

And he had a heart attack right there.

Mom:call the doctors.

I shoudn't have come.Look now.Maybe I killed my father.

The doctor came and they took him away.

Mom:Ava?

I nodded.I was holding back the tears.

I thought that they would throw me out or something.Mom just hugged me.

Mom:I knew you were alive,something in me told me that you would come back home.

I let the tears fall.My mother.Princess Stella's grandmother.

I let her go and she looked at me then moved her eyes to Taylor.

Mom:and who is this lovely beauty?

Me:your granddaughter.

Mom was stunned.I know its shocking.

Sean:wow!and you decide to come back after all these years.Elena you know how hurt everyone was?the heartache of not knowing where you are and finally declaring you dead.

Me:I will explain my reasons.At least Sean don't get angry at my daughter.

He softened a bit.

Me:thank you.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:46] Lynne: WDC

.

23

.

TAYLOR

This palace was magnificent.I was led to a room in the palace.

It was so nice and huge.

Me:thank you.

This is soo nice.

I called Camilla.

She picked up on the second ring.

Wait!I didn't tell her I'm royalty.

Me:Cammy.

Milla:Tay.

Me:how are you?

Milla:not good.

Me:whats wrong?

She started to cry.

I calmed her down and she started to say that she thinks she has cancer.

Me:Camilla calm down.You are not sick okay?you don't have cancer.Calm down.

Milla:I have to go.

She hung up.Yoh!

I just decided to pack my stuff.I sent the royal maids or help or whatever they call them away.I'm okay just like this.They have gone through enough trouble by fixing me a room.They don't need to clean up after me honestly.

.

.

AVA

I had a lot of explaining to do. And I was going to explain when dad was okay. It was a minor heart attack according to the doctor.

Sean was still angry.

I understand. I disappeared for 23 years and I rock up out of nowhere to disturb their lives.

Sean: I still can't believe this. I need some air.

He walked out and I was about to follow him when mom touched my shoulder.

Mom: don't do that. Give him time.

I nodded and she went to attend to dad.

I sighed and walked out.

.

.

TAYLOR

I walked out of the room. I asked the help to direct me to the garden.

She walked me there and it was spectacular. It was breathtaking with a rose garden.

Daisies and lilies. My favourite flower has to be daisies.

And this garden had every flower you can imagine. I saw a daffodil and it was blooming.

It was chilled.

I picked a blue rose and walked over to the bench nearby.

I sat down.

My life has changed in a period of months.

Honestly. I was almost raped, he was prosecuted. I made a new friend who is moody as fuck these days.

I discovered that I'm royalty which is kind of weird. Like the publicity that will come with it and all that.

But then at the moment my reputation's never been worse.

"penny for your thoughts?" I almost jumped. When I turned I discovered it was my mom's brother or is it?

Him:Hi.

Me:hey.

I'm still scared of all male species so I don't want them near me. At all.

I just moved back a bit.

He lifted his hands in surrender.

Him:I don't bite but its okay. I guess you don't get along well with strangers. I'm your mother's brother Sean.

Me:the king?

He nodded.

I remained silent as I observed my surroundings. If I had come here earlier. But it is what it is. Mom had to make decisions to keep me safe and I would never be angry at her. Never.

Sean:whats your name?

Me:Taylor.

Sean:oh!

I just picked an orchid which was nearby.

Sean:you like the flowers?

Me:they are soft and sweet.They don't hurt anyone and they..

I realised I was crushing the flower.

Me:they are just nice.

Sean:I see.So how was life growing up?

Me:as long as my mom was with me it was great.She attended all my school activities and took care of me.She was everything.

Sean:so did you study?

Me:actually yes.Architecture and interior design.

Sean:thats smart.

This small talk was going nowhere.Maybe I should just excuse myself.

Me:Let me go.Its getting a bit late.

Sean:of course.

I went back to the room and I changed to my pyjamas and slept.Tomorrow might be a long long day.

.

.

ZACK

I was with Kelets o.

Me:whats wrong?

Kele:well Taylor has been ignoring my calls.

Me:she'll come around.

Mom:was that queen Eva?

Me:I have no idea.But we will find out soon.

This was still puzzling mom.

.

.

JEROME

Prison has been hell. My lawyer says there is no way I can appeal the sentencing. And he said I got a lighter sentence.

I hate jail and some of the guys in this cell have been looking at me in some type of weird way and I hate it.

Anyway I slept on the cold mattress.

Tomorrow is yet another day in hell. Damn Taylor!!!

When I get out of this hellhole I'm coming for her.

.

.

TAYLOR

I woke up in the morning and I had a shower. I wore my long maxi yellow dress and sandals.

I went to the kitchen and the servants were preparing breakfast.

I greeted them and I sat down. I'm curious to know more about the place. And Avalore in general. I didn't grow up here so I just want to know. Plus wait, I did

architecture so maybe I can get the history of this building in particular.

I won't get involved in the argument I passed by. Maybe it's their way sorting out what happened in the past.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:47] Lynne: WDC

.

24

.

AVA

I had to spill out everything. I left out the part of Eva lying to Sanele. It was going to cause a huge rift in the family. I lied also by saying I ran away because I was pregnant. That was half true though. My heart was broken by the only man I had ever loved.

And dad understood. Mom was silent and Sean was

silent too.

Dad:can I see the Princess?

Me:of course.

I got out of the room and I could finally breath.

I looked for Taylor and I found her eating in the kitchen while talking with the helpers.

Me:Taylor?

Tay:yes mom.

Me:someone wants to meet you.

She stood up and followed me.

Tay:who is it?

Me:your grandfather.

She was still wearing the amulet.

We got to the room.

Dad:she is so beautiful and I see she is wearing the amulet.She has the gift?

I nodded.

Sean:that explains a lot,why my kids don't have it and Eva's kids don't have the gift.She is beautiful and it suits her.

Me:thank you.

She greeted and my dad asked her to sit at the edge of his bed.

Mom was just smiling.

Well she talked with dad and they kind of clicked.

Sean:you raised her well.

Me:thank you.

.

.

TAYLOR

Weeks passed and Avalore was awesome.I enjoyed it and the family accepted me just like that.

Well Cammy was pregnant which was good news on her part and I was happy for her.That explains why she was eating too much.

Well my grandfather was like there needs to be a ceremony for me.Me being introduced to royalty and all its circles.So they were planning a royal ball.All the royal families from all over the world would be invited.Scary right?

And there was this designer who was assigned the task of designing my dress.

I wanted something dark.Her name was Tasha.

Me:Tasha I want something dark.

She noted it down before she spoke.

Tasha:ma lady..

Me:call me Taylor.

She nodded.

Tasha:Taylor don't all princesses want something colourful and light?

Me:I'm not all princesses.I want something that screams mysterious.

Tasha:its going to be quite difficult.What colours were you thinking about?

Me:well some deep burgundy.It should be a ball gown.Princessy but the belt should be black lace.Can yu do that dear?

Tasha:let me try to sketch out your idea for you then we'll take it from there.

Me:thank you.

She left.I do hope I won't dance with any guy there.I don't want these creatures hovering around me.Honestly.I have enough guy drama to last me an eternity.And I hope I don't sing too.I don't want the kings and queens there envisioning me as their daughter in law.

Mom walked in my room.

Mom:my princess.

I just hugged her.

Me:mom this is overwhelming.Will I be expected to behave in a certain way?will my whole life change?

Mom:baby it all depends on you.J ust know that love you and the only thing I live for is your happiness.

Me:thank you mom.I need to wipe these tears away.

She used her thumb to wipe my tears away.

Mom:my little healer.Baby don't allow anger and darkness to consume your heart.It will cloud your gift and we don't want that.Baby you are the light.Princess Stella to be exact.

I nodded as she left my room.My phone rang and I laughed.

Me:my pregnant whale.

Milla:Yazi if you or Ella say that one more time consider me a murderer cause I'm going to kill you two for calling me that.

Me:whatever.You can't even stab a fly.

She laughed.

Milla:your jokes are lame Princess.And I'm sorry I won't be making it there.You are my friend but I'm not even sure how the weather will be treating me that side.

Me:I understand you are carrying precious cargo babe.I can't beleive you made me a godmother at such a young age.

Milla:mxm.O rata dilo moo mas we wena waitse.

I laughed.

I need to learn french.My mother's tongue.But it all sounds so hard.I'n used to South Africa and its language.

Me:I'll send you pics and videos so you don't miss out.

Milla:I appreciate that.When you come back from that side bring a souvenir for me please.

Me:alrights.Bye love.

Milla:bye bye.

She hung up.This woman is crazy.I don't know how she managed to not get admitted at a mental institution.

I just went to the music room and I got the acoustic guitar.Music is such a beautiful thing and mine is unique because it heals.

I just sang Zoe Grace's Running.

Maybe I've running way from God instead of to Him.

But the pain is still there and I still have nightmares. Just a man being close to me makes my skin crawl. I don't know what it will take for me to get over that. I'm a healer and I can't heal myself. Ironical right?

I just continued with singing.

When I was done. I heard somebody clapping their hands.

It was my grandmother.

Granny: Stella you have something so unique. Share it with the world. Heal those aching hearts.

I smiled.

Granny: Which instruments do you play?

Me: the guitar, flute and piano. I never learnt the harp although it looks interesting.

Granny: wanna learn the harp?

I nodded.

Granny: consider it done.

I smiled.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:47] Lynne: WDC

.

25

.

TAYLOR

I looked at myself in the mirror.

Rosy cheeks, maroon lipstick with smokey
eyeshadow and one hell of a facebeat.

I almost didn't recognise myself. I looked gorgeous.

My hair well was styled so elegantly.

Wow! I can't believe it and of course Tasha brought
out her best design and the dress is superb. Its
beautiful honestly.

Mom walked in.

Mom: My only baby.

She hugged me. My tattoo was visible and it suited me well.

Mom touched my neck.

Mom: I thought I was dreaming.

Me: well you are not mom.

Mom: but why did you have to get a tattoo.

Me: it's complicated, let's leave it.

Mom: but I'm not done.

Me: yes mother.

She walked out as my granddad came.

He was looking so handsome. He does not look a day over 60. And grandma is beautiful.

No wonder mom is pretty. She has good looking parents.

I wonder how my dad looks. I heard mom's twin will be coming.

This I have to see with my own two eyes. It means she's coming with my father which means I

basically have other siblings.This is one complicated relationship,gosh!

Grandpa:you ready princess?

I nodded.

Me:I think I am.

Grandpa:and today you will be gracing us with your sweetvoice.

Me:I don't think my choice of song will touch their hearts.Its complicated.

Grandpa:I trust you darling.

Me:then here goes nothing.

He held my hand as he led me slowly out of the bedroom.

We were going to the ball room.Thats where all royal balls are held and I was the reason why many peopl were gathered.

And I did tell my grandpa about my history.About history I mean J erome.Thats why I'm singing this song.Its not like I forgot everything but it is what it

is.

Let no guy touch nor dance with me please.

When we got there the whole room went quiet.

We were by the stairs and all eyes were on me.

We slowly descended the stairs as there were gasps and whispers. I hate media gosh.

Grandpa: Well introducing the Princess of Avalore, my very own granddaughter Princess Stella.

People clapped their hands. That's not the response I had.

Grandpa: It's a long story but she is finally back home, Stella welcome to royalty.

And I spotted Zack with the corner of my eye. I forgot he's royalty.

Grandpa: and also my long lost daughter. It was a surprise when she came back home but she is back. Princess Ava Elena Valencière.

People clapped their hands so loud as mom made a grand entrance. This woman is beyond beautiful and

she is my mom guys. She was wearing a crown.

When she reached to where we were she just removed it and put it on my head.

Mom: you have it Princess Stella.

I didn't want to cry.

I curtsied and they clapped their hands once more.

Well Grandad let me go and asked me to mingle with the crowd. I don't do mingling well. I just took a glass of champagne from one of the waiters as I slowly slipped on it.

God! I hate crowds. This is so claustrophobic. I can't deal. They will have to miss me.

I went to sit at a far corner as I had my drink in peace.

Just when I thought the bubbles are going to go to my head I saw Keletso.

I don't want to deal with people. People are complicated and people are dangerous and unpredictable.

Kele:hi Taylor or should I say Princess Stella.

Me:hey.

She grabbed a chair and sat next to me.Great!just great!

Kele:uhm,I know you hate my family for what Jerome did to you but we didn't condone that.It was a disgrace to our family.

Me:it happened.Its in the past.

Kele:but it seems like you're still stuck in the past.

Me:excuse me if I'm trying my absolute best to move far from anything and anyone related to Jerome so that I can heal.

Kele:oh!

She stood up.

Kele:guess I'll be seeing you then.

She left.

Mom came to where I was sitting.

Mom:I've been looking all over for you

princess. Your performance. Two songs. People want to hear their Princess's voice.

I stood up as I put the glass down. I wasn't drunk and kill me for not wearing heels. I wouldn't manage them all night.

There was a piano set up and some people at the instruments. We practiced this and I hope I don't flop.

Me: uhm, hi. I will just be doing two songs which are originally not mine but have a certain message that relates to me on a much personal basis. Enjoy.

Everyone was sitted.

Me: "I guess you really did it this time.

Left yourself in your warpath.

Lost your balance on a tightrope.

Lost yourself tryin to get it back.

Wasn't it easy in your lunchbox days.

Always a bigger bed to crawl into.

Wasn't it beautiful when yoy believed in everything.

And everybody believed you?

Its alright,just wait and see.

Your string of lightd is still bright to me.

Oh who you are is not where you've been.You're still an innocent"

i just continued with the song and the tears fell as I was playing the piano while singing.

Me:"Who you are is not what you did.You're still an innocent"

I wiped my tears and when I glanced at the crowd some had their tissues dabbing their tears away.

Me:uhm,lets all try to smile for the next song.

They all laughed a bit.

Me:that song is called Innocent.Some of you can relate to it and why I sang it.Uhm..

The tears trickled down my cheeks.

.

TBC

[03/12, 08:48] Lynne: WDC

.

26

.

TAYLOR

Me:uhm..

The tears trickled down my cheeks as mom came and wiped them away with her thumb.

Mom:baby are you okay?

Me:yeah.I'll live.Let me do this last one and please tell them to stop crying.

I said laughing in between the tears.

Mom:you're just too good baby.

I smiled.

Me:the makeup is not ruined?

Mom:no.Its fine babe.You can go on.We still want more of your beautiful voice.

Me:on it pronto.

She chuckled.

Mom:that's my girl.

Me:akere you took a video?

Mom:yeah!

Me:then send it to me,so Cammy can see it.

Mom:alright.

Me:sorry for that emotional moment.My last song is
Head Above Water.please don't cry.

This time I got up from the piano.I just need the
band.

Here goes nothing.

Me:'Tve got to keep the calm before the storm.

I don't want less I don't want more.

Must bar the windows and the doors.To keep me
safe,to keep me warm.

Yeah my life is what I'm fighting for.

Can't part the sea,can't reach the shore.

And my voice becomes the driving force.

I won't let this pull me overboard.

God keep my head above water,don't let me drown.IT GETS HARDER.

I'll meet you there at the alter.Don't let me drown"

Gosh!I couldn't stop the tears as I sang this song.Because it relates to me on a deeper level.I feel like I'm drowning though I believe that that Jerome is still an innocent.

Me:"God keep my head above water.I lose my breath at the bottom.

Come rescue me,I'll be waiting,I'm too young to fall asleep."

I just sang the last parts of this song.

When I was done.People were in tears again.

Me:thank you.

I got off the stage and just went to hug mom.

Mom:its okay baby let it all out.

Me:it hurts mommy.It still hurts so bad.I'm scarred for life.I can't get it out of my head.

She just rubbed my back.

.

.

ZACK

Wow!She saing such emotional songs and she had everybody in the room in tears.

Kele:I can relate to her music.Thats what has been in her heart.Bro don't cry.

Me:I'm not crying.

I can feel from the way she sang she was still hurting and she sang with tears in her eyes.I don't know why that hurt me.I just felt my heart pull a little.That girl has talent.She has something really special within her if only she could let go of the pain,the anger,the isolation.If she could let it all go she would shine bright.Thats why they named her Stella.

Mom:and J erome tried to damage this phenomenal young lady.She is just extraordinary.

Me:she is mother.She definitely is.

She was still with her mom. And when her mom let her go and left her there I decided to be a gentleman or let me rather say prince and I went to her.

She looked startled.

Me: Princess Stella.

Her: moprofeta.

I chuckled and she smiled.

Tay: to what do I owe this visit Prince Zulu?

Me: can I have a dance with you?

Tay: oh uhm, I think..

She was trying to cook up an excuse.

Me: I won't hurt you Taylor if that's what you think I will do.

Tay: I..

Me: I promise.

Tay: it's just one dance right? it won't hurt anyone.

She was scared. I think scared of someone of the opposite sex touching her or even talking to her.

She just gave me her hand and it was shaking.

Me:its okay.

Tay:this is a bad idea.

She quickly retracted her hand.She had her other hand to her heart.

Me:its okay.Breath Taylor.

Tay:uhm you can go dance with one of the princesses.I'm sure lots are waiting for you to ask them.

I left her there as she started to breath in and out.Trying to calm down.Was Taylor having a panic attack?

.

.

TAYLOR

I almost had a panic attack or was it an anxiety attack?

I won't dance with any man tonight. I think I have a phobia of man. I just went to sit at a far corner. I don't want large crowds surrounding me. I can sing on stage because it's sort of natural but I had just had a breakdown on stage.

My grandma came.

Granny: Princess, come on, dance with one of the princes here. Maybe you might get married to him.

Me: no. It's fine, granny. I'm okay.

Granny: if you say so.

Mom came to take me.

Mom: Taylor baby, don't do this to yourself.

Me: mom, it's how I deal with it. So let it go.

Mom: there is someone I want you to meet.

She helped me stand up and went with me and I saw someone who looked exactly like her.

Mom: Taylor, well, that's my twin Eva and her husband Sanele.

Me: hi, nice to meet you.

Mom:Eva and Sanele meet my daughter Stella.

Thats my dad?yoh!Guy wa baba.God forgive me but if thats my dad I get why Eva would want him too.He is flames.Flames I tell you.

Mom:Taylor why are you smiling?

Me:its nothing.Hi Eva and Sanele.Mom I guess I have an aunt and an uncle?

Mom:yep.

Me:If you would excuse me mom,I want to sit down and watch people dance.

The way Sanele or should I say dad or uncle.Whatever works for whatever mood.He was looking at mom in some typa way and Eva or should I say aunty dearest was controlling her anger.

Yoh!I'm not getting involved in this mna.

I went to sit down as the waiters served the food.

There were dances and it was fun.

I got a message from Cammy.

She said she was proud.Kana I had sent her the videos and pics and updated her.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:48] Lynne: WDC

.

27

.

AVA

I introduced my daughter to my twin sister and her husband.

Eva:I thought you died?

Me:me too hey.But surprise surprise I'm still alive.I shocked myself too.

Eva:and she has the gift.

Me:of course.After all she is my child.

Sanele was quiet.

Me:do I have nephew and nieces?

Eva:yes.Twin girls and a boy.

Me:thats nice.I want to meet them.

Eva:of course I'll call them.

Me:mhmm..

I thought standing here talking to Eva and seeing Sanele would bring the spark me and Sanele used to have.Guess I outgrew it.

Eva came with them.We are just being civil.

Eva:Thando,Thandi and Shane meet your aunt.

The kids seemed nice.

Me:Sanele you've got pretty kids.They are nice.

Sanele:uhhm.yeah!

Me:let me call Taylor.

I just went to take my baby and she had her father's features.Hope he doesn't catch on.We are too old for custody battles.

Me:Sanele,Eva meet Taylor.Taylor meet Sanele and

Eva.

She smiled.I know my daughter is not rude.

She extended her hands giving me weird looks.

Taylor:Hi,pleasure to meet you.I heard so much about you guys.

Eva:good things I hope.

Tay:definitely good things.I guess I should call you my aunt and uncle.Yay!mom I got an aunt and an uncle.I've got to dash.

And she was putting on a show.I know Taylor and she was not that estatic to meet them.

Me:nice bumping into you King and Queen Radebe.
I left them and just sat down to where Taylor was sitting.

.

.

TAYLOR

Mom:you did that just for show didn't you?

Me:thats my dad right?

Mom:unfortunately yes.

Me:unfortunately?that man is so freakin hot mom.

Mom:shut it.Don't scream.

I shrugged.If a nigga is hot,he's hot bethuna jho!

Me:I get why both sisters wanted him.He's hot meat.Hot property.

Mom:thats your father child.

Me:he doesn't know does he?

Mom:he doesn't.And I will keep it that way.I won't be a reason why their marriage falls into pieces.They seem happy.

Me:happy kae?mama he was drooling looking at you.Its all just a facade I'm telling you.Mama you...

Mom:me has to leave you and you child are going to dance on that dancefloor tonight.

Me:mom!!donlt force me.

Mom:girl get up.

I didn't and she just forced me up.

Mom:you are going to dance with our prophet prince.I saw when he was asking to dance.J ust try to loosen up.He won't hurt you.J ust this once.

She was saying this heading to his direction.

Mom:Hi.I brought this young lady for a dance.Bye.

She just put my hands in his and she left.This woman is evil hands down aah!

Zack chuckled.

Zack:I see you're back.

He has such a deep voice.

Me:yeah!as you can see somebody decided to force me.

I said looking back at my mom who gave me a thumbs up.

Me:but because I'm here.I'll dance.

Zack:then lets dance princess.

We danced and this time I think I felt a bit safe.

And when the song finished people clapped for us. I didn't notice we were the only people dancing on the dance floor.

Zack: pleasure dancing with you princess.

He said as he bowed and left.

I went back to my seat.

Mom: now was that bad?

Me: it was actually nice. But you know I dance other songs.

Mom: You're multitalented.

Me: I know. I got it from my lovely mom.

She smiled.

Mom: I love you Taylor.

Me: and Princess Stella loves you too mommy.

We hugged and then had some food. The night was still young.

.

.

A week passed and I wanted to try and re-establish myself back in South Africa.

Granny:you can still stay here Stella.

Me:I know I didn't exactly have a life there and I can have a life here but I'm not used to being served and not doing anything besides I have a project I need to complete.

Granny:what project?

I told her about Cammy's project and me being the head renovator and designer.

Granny:wow!thats one massive project.Is there anything we can do to help?

Me:I'll talk to her and I'll give you the feedback.Plus its a great project.What she wants to do for those kids out there.Its really great.Thats why I agreed.

Granny:You have a good heart.I can't believe your mother raised you to be such a lady alone.

I smiled.

Me:she's strong and I love her.She did what most women would have struggled with.

Granny:and I'm proud of her,though we were never there when you were growing up but we want to be there for you.Me,your grandfather and uncle.

Me:its okay.And did I tell you I met my aunt and her husband at the party.

Granny:really?thats nice.

Me:yeah!

We talked and she left.She had some things to sort out.

I just went to the music room and well there was a recording studio.

I just wore the headphones and got busy.Singing whichever that came into mind and of course Lauren Daigle came into mind.She like a year or two older than me but her music touches lives.

Milla made me fall in love with her music gosh!

I get why she listens to her.Maybe one day I might meet her.Who knows.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

[03/12, 08:49] Lynne: WDC

.

28

.

ZACK

Me:so babe what are you thinking about?

Her:I didn't think it would end like this.You know.We survived.

I was rubbing her feet.

Me:yes my priness we survived.

Her:I love you Zack.

I chuckled.

Me:I love you Tshepi.

She giggled.

Her:you know I feel so weird when people call me

by that name.

Me:I know.So the future?

Her:we'll see.As long as I'm with you and we keep on fighting this spiritually then I'm good.

Me:did I tell you that I love you woman?

She giggled.

Her:you did Mr Zulu ro should I say Prophet Zulu.

When she says Prophet its just a turn on.

Me:let me say it again nana.

She giggled again.Her and her giggles though.

Me:I love you a lot and I can finally say you're the rib I've been looking for.

Her:and you are my flesh.I was a mess and you fixed me.

Me:I love you ok.

She laughed.

Her:Zack stop it,its becoming cheesy.

Me:I love you woman.

Her:I know moprofeta.

.

I woke up from the dream or was it a vision.It can't be her.God!!

The voice,its her.I actually saw her face.This is going to be hard.

I woke up and just got on my knees.

Me:God,I know its been almost a year,You've been giving me glimpses of who you chose for me but now I saw her I...

I was speechless.

Me:But I'm clueless on how to approach her Lord.She has been through so much and for her to trust it won't be like that so easily.

As I was in my prayer my guardian angel Rose appeared.

Rose:Blessed.

Me:Rose you should at least give me a warning.

Rose:Zack you have seen her.You know what you

ought to do.

Me:its not that simple.

Rose:this is union blessed by heaven.It will happen one way or another.

Me:Rose,don't scare the poor child tuu.

Rose:I'm not like that Zack.You should know I do what you want me to do.

Me:just don't involve any of heaven's angels in this.She probably has never seen an angel.

Rose:she has a calling on her life,she must see them at one point of her life.

Me:healing.I kind of picked it up from her singing and the way people were so touched by her voice.

Rose:smart.

Me:I know.

Rose:thats why God made her customely for you.She is the one.

She disappeared and I sat on my bed.

This is so complicated. She is my cousin's ex and things didn't end so well on their part.

.

.

TAYLOR

I didn't want to leave my mom this side. Honestly.

Mom: I'll be back there in a month my baby. Just hang on.

Me: okay mom.

They bid me goodbye as I boarded a flight back to SA. Now people know that I'm royalty.

This is going to be tiring that's for sure.

My flight was a six hour or is it five? one of the two.

When I sat down I just pushed the chair backwards a bit and I wore my sleeping mask.

I just decided to sleep. I don't want to think of anything or about anyone.

.

.

J EROME

Today at the cell a fight broke out and the guy was spoiling for a fight. Like seriously. I do know how to fight and if some of the inmates had not stopped me I would have killed that fuckin bastard. Trying to get on my nerves.

I had a visitor. I could tell by the warden's shout.

I got there and it was my mother.

She frowned when she saw me. Probably because of the bruises.

Mom: what happened J erome? did they hurt you? we can report this you know.

Me: I'm fine mother what do you want?

Mom: just wanted to check on you and well I don't know if I should tell you this but...

Me: but what?

Mom: that Taylor girl is royalty.

She's what now?so soon and fast?

Me:from which family?

Mom:the Valenciès.

I whistled.

Mom:trust me I was surprised.They are one of the most powerful royals in the world and she is the king's niece meaning that she is the former king's granddaughter.

Me:is that all?

Mom:Jerome please take care of yourself in there.I want you whole when you get out.You are only left with a year and some months so please.Its February now.Take care of yourself for my sake if not yours.

She left and I was escorted back to the cell.

Life is hell this side.

.

.

TAYLOR

The flight landed and well I got out and breathed in the oxygen.

Now to book myself into a hotel.

I need to find a new apartment. Something stylish and cheaper. And mom will finally be moving in with me when she comes back. Yay!!

I caught a cab which dropped right at the entrance of the hotel I will be staying in for this week.

I paid him and he helped me get out my luggage. It was just three suitcases and two small suitcases and my handbag.

Well I booked myself in and the hotel staff helped me with the luggage. I paid the guy a tip just for carrying the luggage.

Me: now time to work.

I called Camilla who was moody as f. Pregnant women and their hormones. Gosh!

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:49] Lynne: WDC

.

29

.

TAYLOR

Well things have been quite hectic with trynna get builders but since well some of them know me from where I worked with Zack they agreed.

We are finally getting Milla's first baby off the ground this is so exciting. I told her about my grandma's offer and she agreed. We do need that one million.

Milla even opened a bank account for her home. This is so exciting.

But Zack is into construction too and he is their friend too. I don't wanna call him. I can do this.

I just had my glass of wine and scrolled down to the next page of my novel. Good thing I came with a

guitar this side. It was kind of pink and it was pretty. Besides I need to write my own music.

Let me think of everything that has happened. I will not write about my sorrows at the moment. There are little girls out there who are insecure about their looks.

I've been there and it's not a pretty sight to cry every night thinking you are not enough. Thinking that you are not pretty enough. Always looking at your flaws every damn day. Wishing you were created differently. If you were a bit lighter in complexion. If your brow had arched that way. If your hair was a different colour. Thinking that if you had this eye colour you would be pretty.

Everyday I see girls on social media tryin to be what they are not all in the name of likes.

I just took out my notepad and started to jot down lyrics. If my music heals I do pray this song touches their hearts. I hope that they heal from this false perception of themselves. I might not have healed from the almost rape saga but then other people

benefit a lot from my music.I need to do something.

In an hour I was done.I think that was fast really.I don't have a beat but whatever.I'll make one up as I go.I grabbed my guitar and I sat crosslegged on the mat.

I just put video mode on my phone.I wasn't live on any social media site.I just want to see if I got it right.

So I tittle this song "SHOUT OUT"

Me:"she looks in the mirror.

She sees her enemy.Those big brown eyes are too much.But she doesn't know.She don't know.Let us let her know.

Every rose garden has thorns.They are imperfect in their own perfect way.

Those flaws make you perfect that you were.

So this is a shout out to all the girls out there.Don't try to be anyone,just do you"

hmm.Wasn't bad for a first time song.I need to perfect that.It needs to be edgy and catchy.Plus,if I

need a way to talk to girls and stuff.

And Zack has a church. Obviously there are youths there.

Damn, why does Zack's name keep popping in my thoughts.

I seriously need to get it out. This is strictly business. More like well trying to help a few confused individuals out there.

Let me swallow my pride and call him. There is no harm in trying to ask. Besides it's a good initiative and I need to keep busy.

I don't have a job because I quit of course. Reminds me to go visit Jerome in prison. Just to see if karma hasn't knocked on his doorstep to come bite him for what he tried to do.

Another issue we need to address. The people we trust are the ones who always try to do bad things to you. I seriously need a girl group. There is so much that the girl child should know.

I called Zack.His phone was ringing.

.

.

ZACK

Since that revelation a week back I didn't know what to do.

Taylor is just..I don't know.How do you tell a woman who is still very much suffering from trauma and is in denial that you are her husband or rather that she is chosen for you?how do you do that exactly.Its a bit of a tough issue.

My phone rang and I didn't even check the caller id.

Me:Prophet Zulu speaking hello.

I know that when I'm serious I can be very intimidating and well thats part of who I am.

There was silence at the end of the line.Some soft breathing.

Okay.

Caller:Prophet.

Her soft voice.

Me:Taylor.

Tay:well..I didn't mean to disturb you.I know you're a busy man and it was not my intention to disturb your busy schedule.I was wondering....okay well I have an idea.A project call it such.

There was silence.

Tay:this was a bad idea.

Me:no speak.

Tay:I just thought of it now and....urg!well....Its about helping other people out there and...the short of it,can I pitch the idea to you?

Me:okay.I'll call you back and tell you when I'm free.

Tay:thank you.I'm sorry for the distraction.I didn't mean to call out of nowhere.I know that I have been offly rude in the past and I apologise.

Me:its okay.

Tay:honestly its not.You are a man of God and the way I've been treating you was not respectful to a

man of your calibre. It was rude of me and I know God might not be pleased by that. I sincerely apologise. I humbly apologise. I let my problems turn me out to be something I'm not. I know you won't say it but I was disrespectful to you on a serious note. Prophet Zulu I apologise. I hope you accept my apology. I will personally offer my apology and thank you for trying to fit me in your busy schedule. Have a good day.

Me:bye.

She hung up. Okay. Was Taylor really apologising? wow! God works in mysterious ways.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

[03/12, 08:50] Lynne: WDC

.

30

.

IN ZACK'S OFFICE

.

TAYLOR

I was pitching my idea to him. He managed to squeeze me in his tight schedule and I was grateful. He won't regret it.

Me: well that's basically it. I just want to inspire the girl child.

Zack: and how will this benefit them? Many people want to inspire the girl child and things are still the same? how is your inspiration different?

Yoh!! This is a hard one. He was so serious and all.

Me: Uhm..

He was waiting for an answer because well this is something big. He will be placing the youth of his church in my hands and that means he should trust me.

Me: Well it's going to be different because I'm looking at this in the long term. I'll be trying to work with them.

Zack:I don't hear you Ms Radebe.

I sighed and sat down.

Me:okay.I just want to be there for someone.

Zack:and by the looks of it you're not ready to do what you do.Cracking under pressure and confusing yourself in your presentation.

Me:but I want to do this.

Zack:and you're not ready.It shows.

I sighed.

Me:and here I thought I was doing the most.

He chuckled.

Zack:give it time.Now...is not the time.

Me:I guess so.Besides I have a project I'm working on at the moment.

Zack:the childrens home?

Me:how did you know?

Zack:I have a very good source.

I smiled.

Me:that.Its halfway there and in a month's time it will be done.

Zack:thats good.

Me:yes.I guess I should go.

I started to pack my stuff and I took my bag.

Me:Sorry for wasting your time with my flop of a presentation.I'll see you someday and maybe on Sunday I might come to church.Bye.

I took my things and left.I've never felt so embarassed in my life.I thought I was going to wow him with my presentation and it turned out to be a complete disaster.

I took a cab to town.I need something to eat and its a bit too early for a glass of wine.

I had found an apartment and the moving company is moving my stuff out of that old house.The one I used to stay in when J erome tried to rape me.

.

I sat down in this small cafè and ordered some coffee.

While I was just still relaxed I saw someone making their way to me.

Her:Hi.

Me:hello.

I think I know this face.I saw her at the part my grandparents held for me in order to introduce me into royalty.

She sat down.She is too forward.Who told her to sit down?And then people will think I'm rude.

Her:I don't think our parents introduced us I'm Thandi.

Me:I don't think I know you.

Thandi:well you don't but I want to know you.

Waphapha this child.How old is she?waphapha blind.

Me:and why do you want to know me and why would our parents introduce us?

Thandi:well my mom is your mom's sister.

Me:your mom is Queen Radebe?

Thandi:yes.

Me:interesting.

She is my half sister but she doesn't know.And I will keep it that way.

Thandi:yes so that means we're basically cousins.

Me:really now?

Thandi:yes.

Me:well we will talk another time.I didn't get your name again sweetheart?

Thandi:Thandi.I have a twin sister named Thando and a brother named Shane.

Me:yes.We'll talk another time.I have to be somewhere.

Thandi:can I have your number?

I faked a smile.

Me:of course.

I gave her my number and I left.I don't want people around me and now my half sister wants to get to

know me.The drama in this family aaah!

.

.

THANDI

Well it looks like Taylor does not like to hang round people but its fine.

I think I like her.I saw her at that ball and she was gorgeous.And her voice.God!!

I just stayed and ordered.Mina akere most of my cousins don't want to hang out with me.Its either I'm not cool or I'm annoying them.One of the two.They prefer hanging out with Thando.She is more cool,fashion forward and ish.Boring life of princess Thandi.

.

.

ZACK

I arrived home and I still can't tell her like that,that we are supposed to get married.

Its hard.But I will.I will give it a month or so.She is still not comfortable around me.Not that I want her to be because she might be disrespectful and speak to me anyhow.

My phone rang.

Me:Zulu speaking.

Caller.....

Me:and where did you get my number again?

Caller.....

Me:I don't have time for this honestly.

I hung up.I hate being annoyed especially when I'm thinking about very serious issues here.

.

.

AVA

I decided to go back to SA.I appreciate my parents for just welcoming me back just like that but my daughter has always taken center stage in my life.

Mom:I understand.

Me:thank you.I need to do this.

Dad:you're leaving when?tomorrow?

I nodded.

Sean:it was nice having you here.

Mom:it was and we were doing some cathcing up.

Me:and nothing interesting had happened in my life
this far.Wait.Until of recent and you know all about
it.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:50] Lynne: WDC

.

31

.

TAYLOR

I hugged mom.

Me:mommy.

Mom:Taylor.

Me:and did I tell you that I got a new apartment?

Mom:you did love.On the phone.

Me:oh yah!I just missed you so so much.

Mom:well here I am in the flesh.

Me:Yes mom.

My phone rang.It was Kelets o.She can still call after the attitude I gave her.

Me:Hey.

Kele:Hi.Uhm..I.

Me:its okay and I'm sorry for being rude to you.I was just in my own world.

Kele:its okay really.I just called to ask if we could meet?

Me:give me a date and place.

Kele:I'll send a message.

Me:alright.

Kele:bye.

Me:bye.

I hung up.

Mom:and who was that?

Me:someone who you shouldn't be interested in knowing.

Mom:Taylor are you seeing someone?a certain Mr I should know?

I waved my hand in the air.

Me:ps sh!mom noo!I don't want to date.Guys are just urg..Lets forget it.

She held my hand.

Mom:you're still not over what happened.

Me:I'll be fine.Lets carry your bags and catch a cab.

Mom:Taylor you're avoiding the topic.

Me:mama ngithi ngiright so iyeke please.

She just let me be and we carried her bags to a cab

that she stopped. I hate talking much of the Jerome issue. I mean how can something that almost happened but didn't happen manage to break me? and here I thought I was a strong willed child with a vision and backbone but I guess I was lying to myself back then. All in all I am too sensitive and I don't think I'll view sex in the same way that I used to before I was almost raped.

And getting married is not an option. Let alone dating. I'd rather die single.

I directed the cab driver to my house and well he stopped exactly at the gate. I paid him and me and mom got out.

We took out her luggage.

Me: and here we are mom.

Mom: its nice. But Taylor don't you think you need your own space?

Me: whats my own space without my mom?

She smiled.

Mom: Taylor you're old enough. I can still live in town

but not with you.

Me:so you no longer want to leave with me?

Mom:Its not that.

Me:so mom.J ust do this one thing for me.Its not like I go anywhere except cheking the progress of the childrens' home that Milla has put me in charge of and well buying groceries.I rarely do anything interesting so its quite boring when I'm alone and don't start about Camilla.She's moody that one.I'd rather deal with her via phone.Or else she might kill me personally.

Mom:yoh!its okay.But its not for long Taylor.You need to discover no wait.You need to rediscover yourself.That Taylor.That fearless little girl whom I once raised.You need to find that again.

I nodded.

Mom:I need you again as you.I want my baby back.I only see pieces of her but not her as a whole.

Me:I'll be fine mom.I'll heal in due time.

Mom:If you say so child anyway lets get these bags

inside.How big is your house?

Me:it has three bedrooms.One for you,one for me and a spare bedroom.

Mom:its quite spacious.

Me:And I'm looking for a new job.

Mom:what happened to where you were working?

Me:well...I kind of quit my job.I did some crazy stuff when I was still hurt.

I said running my hand through my hair.

I had a dyed my hair ends pink.I know,its cute on me but thats not the issue here.

Me:Mom.I need a job ASAP.

Mom:you can still go back.

Me:mom,thats a big company.Plus I can't go back.What will the people say?

She shook me so hard.

Mom:Thats why I think you need to find yourself.You never used to care what people

think. And you've gotten so thin. Don't let what happened to you define you Taylor.

And mom is lecturing me. She's right but I just can't erase it like that.

Mom: first step is going to church.

Me: but....

Mom: and it's non-negotiable child. Church it is. Get your Sunday outfit ready because on Sunday we're going to church come rain or sunshine.

Me: yes mam.

She saw her room and took her bags there.

Me: let me leave you there to pack your stuff mom. I'll be in the kitchen trying to whip up something.

Mom: of course.

I walked out of her room and I went to the kitchen.

I sat on the chair and I just wished life had been different for me. I just wish I had not decided to work in J o'burg. Why didn't I go to Capetown or to

Durban?

.

.

ZACK

I kept hearing whispers "and that's why your destinies collided" I woke up.

It was a dream or was it? I don't think I should tell her now. What if I don't even love her but I'm marrying for the sake that she's my chosen wife. And it's so funny for a Prophet to date. I wouldn't call it dating because dating entails sex before marriage and I'm no longer about that life.

I think I need to just plainly lay it out to her. Not in like God says you're the one way. In a way a male shows interest in a particular female.

I just lit my lamp and took out my Bible. Maybe I might think a bit clearer after that.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

[03/12, 08:51] Lynne: WDC

.

32

.

TAYLOR

Me:mom do I look fine?

Mom:of course you look fine.Why are you fussing over how you look?

Me:I just don't want people looking at me in that way.

Mom:they won't stop worrying over your outfit.

I just sighed.I was wearing a white maxi skirt and I had tucked in a black shirt.I was wearing my necklace and my heart shaped earrings.

Mom walked out of my room and I sprayed a bit of my perfume.I wore my white denim jacket on top and sat on the bed to wear my black heels.I also checked my bag to see if I have a Bible and a

notepad to note down what he will be saying.

I forgot that he can give powerful preachings and sermons. I haven't been to church in months and it will be strange to be there after a long time.

.

Me: mom lets go. I'm done.

Mom: did you eat?

Me: I'm not hungry ma.

Mom: eat first.

Me: mama.

Mom: Taylor!

I just sat on the couch and waited for her.

She came and she looked gorgeous.

Me: you look beautiful mom.

Mom: Thank you baby.

We walked out of the house and I locked it.

We caught a cab and asked the driver to take us to church.

Guys when we got there it was full.

It was full.I don't know if we'll find a seat in this big church.

Mom:His Ministry is so big.

Me:it is.I'm nervous.

Mom:its not as if you'll be singing kodwa.You have unnecessary drama child.

The ushers directed us to some free seats.

Me and mom sat down only to stand up again.The choir was singing and they had such melodious voices.

I missed this part of Church.Worship.

.

Church was awesome.The message the Prophet was preaching on was powerful.I think I might start attending regular services there.Its an idea.

Me and mom got home and she started cooking.Thats why I love my mom shem.

.

.

Next morning I was meeting up with Kelets o. I had been so rude to her and she did nothing wrong. I should stop punishing people for J erome's sins. He is paying in pris on which reminds me to go see him there.

J ust to look him in the eye and ask why?why did he do what he did?was I that naïvè or I woke a monster in him?was there something wrong with him for him to try and do what he did?I just want to ask him those questions and I want straight answers.

I wore a long maxi skirt. I hate going out exposed. I feel like all the men's eyes will be on me.

I took a cab and when I got to town I just went straight to the cafè she said we'll meet at. I got there and I saw her. She waved her hand and I made my way to her.

Kele:Taylor hi.

Me:hey.

There was an awkward silence.

Me:I think I should apologise for being rude and taking out my frustrations on you.

Kele:I understand.You were in a bad place and I was just being a pest.

Me:and thats no way to excuse my behaviour.

Kele:its water under the bridge.We should forget it.J ustice got served and here you are still standing.

Me:thank you.How have you been?

Kele:well I've been good.

She pushed her hair back.My hair was in a cute ponytail.

Kele:and the family is good and my brother has been especially good.

Me:I see.Thats good to hear.And you haven't changed one bit.

Kele:yes.I want to know.How have you been holding up?

Me:doing much better.

Kele:and the last time we were on good terms you

didn't tell me you're royalty.

Me:I just found out a few months ago and it my granddad's idea to introduce me to the Royals.To be part of the circle.

Kele:and you did it with poise and grace.

Me:thank you princess.

She smiled.

Kele:And your voice Taylor...

She faked tears and she laughed.

Kele:but honestly its so beautiful and it had me in tears.And I didn't know you could sing like that.I swear everyone was crying.I was also asking myself where did the onions come from.The whole room was in tears.

Me:You lie.I didn't notice.

Kele:how could you notice when you yourself the singer was in tears.You touched many people's hearts.

Me:lets order.

We placed an order and she was talking. God! this child can talk.

She went on to talk about the gossip happening in the royal world.

Me: and don't you know everything.

She smiled.

Kele: I do. and look who's making his way here.

It was Prophet. I have to respect the man. Yoh! Maybe God might punish me for not respecting him.

Zack: ladies.

He hugged his sister and placed a kiss on her cheek.

I just nodded.

Zack: Kele, so sorry for intruding like this. Taylor can I talk to you for a minute?

He looked serious and I excused myself.

Zack: Can you be able to meet me in my office somewhere this week?

Me:sure.

Zack:thank you.

He said bye to Kele and left.I sat down.

Kele:what were you and my brother talking about?

Me:nothing.

Kele:that didn't sound like nothing and the way your eyes are glued on him.Anyway its non of nose y Kelets o's business.

I don't know why the way he told me to come to his office was making me feel strange.He had that aura of authority and power and the deep voice doesn't make it any better but maybe I'm imagining things.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:51] Lynne: WDC

.

.

TAYLOR

Well Zack wanted to talk to me about the childrens home.And I'm happy to say its up and running.Cammy's dream is a success.

I was surprised he wants to be part of the helping the kids.And well I was with him at the moment.

Me:the kids look so happy.

Zack:They do.What Camilla is doing for them is amazing.

Me:and what you're doing for them is also amazing.

Zack:Thats the least I can do.

Me:the least?you are uplifting them and I know that these kids will do well at school.And on behalf of Cammy thank you for taking time of your busy schedule to come read Bible stories for them.They love it.And as always they say.

Us:Raise your children in the way of the Lord so that they should not depart from it.

I laughed.

Me:we said that at the same time.

Zack:we did.Want to grab a bite?

Me:sure.

.

At the restaurant we ordered and well these few months we've been more or so like friends.Like we talk and all that.He has never mentioned anything about my past and well I liked it like that.I'm trying to get over what happened.Because everyday I feel I have another reason to leave.

My phone rang.

Me:excuse me.

I answered.

Me:Thandi.

Thandi:Taylor sorry to disturb but are you free?

Me:Not at the moment.Thandi where are you?

Thandi:out.

Me:by out you mean?don't do it.Don't you dare do it.

Thandi:Its so hard Taylor.Its just so hard.

Me:Where are you?

Thandi:somewhere.Bye.

She hung up.This child thixo!Now I'm scared for her.Well mom and apparently my aunt are okay if I hang out with Thandi.But I don't know if Sanele could see that I look like him in a way.I mean the way my nose is shaped but I can't wait for the drama to unfold.I just don't want Thandi caught up in the mess.She is just..

Anyway Thando ena she has too much pride.She needs to get off her high horse.Like really.I don't hate but I think that won't work for her in the long run.

Zack snapped his finger at me and I just snapped out of it.

Zack:are you okay?

Me:I'm fine.

Zack:you don't look fine.

Gosh!And I want to lie to him and say I'm okay but this is stressing me here.I know what Thandi can do.She tries so hard to fit and its just...

And I know how it is when something eats you up.And what happened is eating me up but I hide it and I smile everyday.I still can't go out wearing tight clothes.And I just...

Its exhausting trying to keep a facade and not even a single soul picking it up.Cammy is a great friend but she has her babies to worry about.She is a mother and is forever busy.Mom moved out and I live alone.I always lock all doors and never let anyone in at night.Its just...

Zack:talk to me Taylor.

Me:I want to.Like Zachariah I really want to.

He blinked and I realised.I just called him by his full name.I've never done that.Ever.

Zack:thats weird Ms Radebe and I don't know if I should be stunned or be feeling disrespected.

My eyes widened as colour crept my cheeks.

Me:I honestly didn't mean to be disrespectful Mr Zulu.

I had my head bowed.

Me:I sincerely apologise.It wasn't my intention.

Zack:Taylor no need to apologise.I was just kidding.

But he had a serious look on and his voice just doesn't make it look like a joke.

Me:Uhm.If you say so.

Zack:now talk.What eating you up?

Me:its my half...

I almost said half sister.He doesn't need to know my family secrets.

Me:cousin.Its my cousin.She has what can I say?she is going through a lot.Thats all I can say for now.

He may be knowing whats going on.He is a prophet afterall.

Zack:I see.

He drank his juice and I wished I had a glass of wine right now.

.

.

THANDI

My mind was just all over. Mom and dad had to go somewhere. Thando being herself was just out partying with her friends. Shane ena at varsity.

And I'm a 17 year old struggling with issues. I know Taylor wanted to come stop me but I feel like I have to do it. She has been nothing but supportive. I may be younger than her but she is like the older sister I never had really.

Like she is like the sister I wished I had. Thando likes distancing herself from me. I'm uncool and I don't fit in at school. I'm always like the other Princess.

She is the "it Princess" I don't think they even know my full name is Thandisiwe. Even Thandi to begin with.

I just looked at what I had purchased. Silver. I did my research. It kills slowly and by the time the doctors find out it will be too late.

I just headed to the kitchen. The cook had already dished out the food and I took my plate.

I went to my room and I opened the bottle. I sprinkled bits of silver all over my food. I think I even put too much of it but it doesn't matter.

I slowly took my spoon and started to eat the food with tears running down my cheeks.

I ate the food till I finished it.

I went to wash my own plate to remove any trace of silver.

God forgive me for this.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:51] Lynne: WDC

.

.

THANDI

I just cried myself to sleep after eating. This is so hard. My first attempt failed because Shane got me in time and my parents were giving me attention and then they left me to deal with it by paying therapists.

Second attempt Taylor stopped me. She is like an angel sent from above. I know she will be disappointed in me but all in all she has cared way more than the people whom I grew up with.

I closed my eyes as I forced my sobs to go down. Life is just cruel.

.

.

TAYLOR

Zack: Taylor?

Me: yes?

Zack:would you help a guy out and go out with me for dinner?

Dinner?with Mr Prophet?whoaaa!Wow!

Me:uhm..yoh!

Was he asking me out?I got my composure and smiled.

Me:Is that a date you're asking for Bab'Zulu?

He smiled.

Zack:and what if it is?

I bit my lower lip and looked at him.He was serious about this wasn't he?

Me:Well what time?

I said with a smile plastered.I didn't even think.

Zack:be ready by 7 Ms Radebe.

Me:of course Mr Zulu.

He paid and left.I have a date.Wait I have a date?With a prophet?this is big.I don't want to blow it out of proportion.What to wear?He is a man of

God. Decency and modesty is all that's in his mind. God why me?

I walked out.

.

Me: Thandi why weren't you answering your phone? You know I care about you.

There was sniffing at the end of the phone.

I was in the bathtub getting ready for my date.

Me: Thandi are you still there love?

Thandi: I am.

Me: why are you crying?

Thandi: I did something bad. I...

And she started crying. I was just silent. Waiting to hear what she did.

Me: Thandi talk to me.

Thandi: I don't want to bother you. Uh we'll talk tomorrow Taylor. Bye.

She hung up.

I called her again and it sent me to voicemail. I swear this child is stressing me.

I got out of the water.

.

There was a knock on the door and I opened it.

Zack:Whoa!

Me:Hi!

Zack:hey. You look beautiful.

Me:Thank you.

Zack:are you ready to go?

Me:of course.

I stepped out and locked the house.

He led the way to his car.

He opened the door for me.

Me:thank you.

Zack:you are welcome Princess.

So this is how dinner with a prophet starts?this is

nice.

He drove to a classy restaurant and all eyes were on us. Like everyone's heads turned and he just walked unconcerned. Next to me.

He moved the chair for me and helped me sit down.

Me: thank you.

He sat opposite me.

Zack: what would you like to order?

Me: anything is fine.

I wanted some wine but I guess I'll have that at home not here.

We ordered some non-alcoholic champagne.

Zack: well Taylor tell me about you?

Me: about me? I don't think there is anything interesting to tell. I grew up with mom and well dad... I'll just leave it at that.

Zack: hmm.

Me: tell me about you. No wait. I don't mean to cross

the line but how did you find out about your calling.

Zack:My father.

Me:your father?he knew?

Zack:you can put it like that.He's the one who told me that and me being in denial I saw flames.Some things you wouldn't want to know.

Me:I see.

The food arrived and well Mr Prophet here is an interesting man to talk to.After dinner he drove me home.

He didn't touch me at all and I think thats a good thing because I just can't deal with a man touching me.

He was at the door.

Zack:Goodnight Taylor.

I smiled.

Me:goodnight Zack.

I closed the door slowly as he made his way to his car and I just slided down from the door.

The tears made their way to my eyes.

I just don't know why am I crying. Is it because I betrayed myself and just decided to let a man back into my life? or I haven't yet dealt with what happened to me that I still can't let any man touch me without getting flashbacks?

I wiped my tears. I'm just being childish. I need to let the past be and think ahead.

I don't know what this date means to be honest and I still haven't found a job on top of that though I was paid so well for renovating the childrens home.

I called Cammy.

Me: Am I being a fool?

Milla: and what do you mean by that?

Me: I want to move on but my past won't let me and what will people say?

Milla: stop speaking in parables Taylor and tell me whats wrong.

Me: And the media will crucify me. And I just don't know what my heart and mind are saying. I swore

myself off men for life and here I am thinking about one.

Milla:who?

Me:Forget I said anything.

Milla:Haibo Taylor.Ga o kake wa bua ka kgang a bo o re ke tlogele bua mma.Tshepang bua ka speti ke ise ke ye koo[You just can't raise an issue and tell me to leave it alone.Tshepang talk before I go there]

Me:We'll talk tomorrow then.Maybe some sleep will clear it off.

I hung up and went to the kitchen.I took my bottle of wine and poured myself a glass.

I sat down and started to do some deep introspection.

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

[03/12, 08:52] Lynne: WDC

.

.

ZACK

Me:come in.

The door opened and I just looked at who disturbed me this busy morning.

Me:Samantha.

Sam:Zack.

Me:and what are you doing here?

She sat down.

Sam:is that how you greet your lover?

She has always been this delusional.

Me:and that was years ago.

Sam:same difference.I loved you.

Me:what we had was temporary and I didn't know better back then.

Sam:but now you know.You need a woman by your side.

Me:as you can see Samantha I'm busy with

work. Now would you excuse yourself out of my office.

Sam: so what we had was nothing?

Me: yes. It was nothing. I was a player back then. That was like three years ago. Now I know better and I still don't want you Samantha.

Sam: wow! we'll see.

She stood up and walked out of my office.

I sighed. Just when I know who I'm supposed to be with, she shows up. The devil is trying to stop this but it's not happening.

I got on with work.

.

.

SAMANTHA

So he was rejecting me all because of her? her? someone who was almost raped?

Oh I've seen them around the cafès and watched them do small talk.

Like she is basically family but she doesn't know.

Well her aunt is married to my uncle, King Radebe making us family. And he goes out with her. She is also young. Zack is older than her. And I'm matured now and I want him back. Prophet or not, he needs some sense knocked in his head in regards to women.

Aaah! speak of the devil. Maybe I just might try my luck or something.

Taylor walked in the restaurant I was in and I called my cousin Thandi. I know she hangs out with Taylor because she's always like "Taylor is awesome, nyalor nyalor." mxm.

It rang.

Thandi: hello.

Me: Thandi. How are you my love?

Thandi: what do you want?

Me: you know me too well dear cousin. Are in the mall?

Thandi: yes. On my way to meet someone.

She hung up on me. The audacity of this child. Oh well.

I drank my latte and I just scrolled down Taylor's social media. She is a princess and I was there when she sang and was being emotional blah blah! I'm also royalty vhele.

I saw Thandi walk in and she went straight to Taylor's table.

I waited for a good ten minutes before I catwalked to their table.

Me: Thandi hey.

She looked annoyed.

Thandi: Sam hi.

Me: aren't you going to introduce us?

Thandi: oh. Taylor this is Samantha my cousin and Sam this is Taylor my cousin. Basically it means we are all cousins because Samantha is dad's niece.

Taylor smiled.

Tay: Samantha nice to meet you.

Me:likewise Taylor.Mind if I join you?

Thandi:uhm...

Taylor:not at all.Sit.

I sat down and what better way to start conversation than to compliment her.

Me:the time at the ball,your voice was superb.

Tay:thank you Samantha.I didn't see you though.

Me:must be because you were preoccupied.But you are beautiful.

Tay:thank you.

Thandi was giving me weird looks.She is just a child.Keep your friends close but your enemies closer.

We ordered and all.Thandi gave in and joined into the conversation.

Me:Its been nice hanging out with you Taylor.We should do it again.

Tay:of course.

I gave her my phone.

Me:can I have your number?

Tay:sure.

She is innocent.Shem.Poor thing.

I catwalked from the table and out of the res traurant to my car.

.

.

TAYLOR

Samantha is dad's niece.This family is getting bigger and bigger by the day.

Me:Thandi now that Sam is gone lets discuss what was up yesterday.

She looked down.

Me:what did you do young lady?

Thandi:I tried to kill myself.Well I'm in the process of it anyway.

It came out as a whisper as my eyes widened.

Me:why?why relaps e?

Thandi:I felt all alone.The usual.

Me:what was it this time?

Thandi:silver.

Me:the fuck?Gosh!stand up we need to go to the hospital ASAP.That thing is dangerous.I don't want to lecture you.I honestly don't want to.I know why you did it but you need counselling babe.Like honestly.Tell your mom.

.

At the hospital the doctor said she might not die since she did it once.

But with continous use she might suffer from asygoris and she she might die eventually.

Me:you heard?

She nodded.

Me:don't scare me like that.I'm too young to die.

She smiled.

Thandi:I love you Taylor.

She just hugged me and I held her and kissed her head.

Me:Love you too nana.J ust don't scare us like that.No matter what you think,your parents and siblings love you.

Thandi:but they don't show it.

Me:people are like that.They may not show it but they love you okay?I just want you to love yourself.You are a pretty young girl and next year you'll be heading to varsity and you need to go get that degree baby girl.

She smiled.

Thandi:you're awesome you know that?

I just smiled.

Thandi:you'll make a great mother someday.

Me:mother?ao gahle.Lets not go that far.Lets get out of here.

We walked out of the hospital and we took a cab to

town and we got icecream.I bumped into Zack and Thandi gave me weird looks.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

.

See everyone when I have time to post.BYEEEEEE!!

[03/12, 08:54] Lynne: WDC

.

36

.

TAYLOR

Me:Zack hi.

Zack:Taylor.Thandi.

She smiled and looked at me.

Thandi:I've got to go Taylor.I have homework.Bye and thanks for a great day.

She left and Zack chuckled.

Zack:I was gonna ask you if you would like something to eat but figuring you already holding some icecream do you want some more?

Me:who could ever say no to icecream?of course.Thank you for offering.

He bought more icecream and took one for himself.

Me:you eat icecream?

Zack:well yes.Sometimes.You seem surprised Ms Radebe.Why is that?

Me:I-Well you look like you hit the gym pretty often and I thought you don't eat junk food.

He chuckled deeply in his throat.That was hot for a prophet.

Zack:Have you been checking me out?

My face flushed and I faced the other direction.

Me:so what brings you around this parts?

I was changing the topic and he noticed that but he played along.

Zack:Needed some fresh air and you I guess for

icecream.

I nodded.

There was silence as we sat down on a bench. He was facing the other direction and I took all of him in.

Believe it or not he is HOT. But problem is I don't think I can handle being a prophet's woman. If you understand. Me and God are not yet in a great relationship and what Jerome did was enough to make me stay away from men for a long time.

FLASHBACK

.

Zack: Hello to you miss.

Me: Hi...I...uhm..yeah!

Zack: you have a very nice voice keep it up!

I didn't know what happened. His presence was too much I couldn't utter a full sentence let alone proper words. When he left the whole choir looked at me. He said my voice was good. Just good nje!!

.

End of flashback.

.

I looked to where I heard my name being called and it was Zack.

Zack:are you okay?you zoned out there.

Me:I'm fine.

I said with a smile plastered on my face.

Zack:I see.Well I've got to go.See you around?

Me:sure.

He left and I just caught a cab to take me home.

.

.

ZACK

I sighed in frustration as soon as I arrived at the office.I can't seem to muster the courage to ask her on a proper date.God knows I'm not the romantic type and had never been in the start.The difficult

thing about this situation is that I know what she is to me plus it would seem so awkward for a whole Prophet to still court.

Hai!!this is honestly beyond me.

But I have an idea.

I got busy on my laptop and did my thing before printing everything out.

Tomorrow I could get a delivering company to deliver this to her doorstep.I hope it works.

.

.

TAYLOR

Me:no!don't take him away from me.

Her:you don't deserve me.He is mine.

Me:not my baby!!

My sobs were so loud and people hadn't noticed a thing.To them it was just a nurse but to me it was the incarnation of the devil.

Her:hush now baby.We are going away from your mommy.

She said walking away with my child and this side I was handcuffed to the damn bed as she walked away.

Where is he when I need him?he said he will protect us but he failed.My baby is gone.Forever.

I wailed for the loss of my only child and I can't live without him.He was supposed to be my blessing.

.

I opened my eyes to scan the room and thank God I was not in a hospital.It was just a bad dream.All of it a bad dream.

I hopped off bed and went to the bathroom to complete my hygiene process.

After I was done I just fixed my hair and wore a floral summer maxi dress with sandals.

Mom might still be sleeping or out.With that woman you never actually know what to expect.

I made cereal for breakfast and I sat down in front

of the television while eating.

There was a door knock and I put my food down.

There was a guy who was holding flowers in his hand and there were baby pink roses. And they smelled so nice.

Guy: Ms Radebe?

Me: yes.

Guy: sign here.

He gave me a document to sign and after I did that he handed me the flowers.

Guy: these are for you miss.

Me: thank you.

He left as I closed the door shut.

The flowers were nice but who were they from?

I just took out the card and it was handwritten.

It read;

The sweetest melodic woman the earth has

known <3

Love

Katlego

my cheeks turned red.

There was more.Can anyone get sweeter yoh!!

It was an envelope which had sort of a wedding design.

I opened it and it was sort of like an invitation card.Ooh!I'm being invited for a wedding.

I opened the card and I was not prepared for what my eyes landed on.

.

To Be Continued

[03/12, 08:55] Lynne: WDC

.

37

.

TAYLOR

I rubbed my eyes thoroughly to make sure I wasn't even dreaming. What the hell??

Its not April fool's day and I certainly did not design that. Modimo!

I re-read the invitation card and I could not actually believe it.

I took the envelope along with its card and my bag. I caught a cab that would take me to his place of work.

I greeted the receptionist and asked if he was there and she agreed.

Heads turned. Surprised to see me there I guess but do I care now? No, I don't.

I walked up to the elevator and pressed the floor number.

Upon my arrival I didn't even knock I just stormed inside the office.

I wanted to say something but he had his sleeves rolled up and they revealed those strong

muscles. That was kind of my fetish. It made men look ten times hotter.

My throat dried and I ran out of words.

He shot me a look from his laptop screen and raised an eyebrow.

Zack: Can I help you with anything?

His voice. Damn him for looking all kinds of sexy when I came here for the sole purpose of arguing.

Me: yes...uhm.

I cleared my throat and closed my eyes and breathed in and out for composure.

Me: I came here so we can talk.

Zack: lock the door.

My eyes slightly widened. Lock the door?

He's not going to do anything to me will he? I mean of course not. He's a man of God. I'm just being paranoid here.

I did as he asked and I sat down directly opposite him.

He closed his laptop as he ran his hand through his hair absentmindedly making me want him.

Zack: And good morning Taylor.

I held on to my bag tightly. What is he doing to me today.

Me: yes - Morning.

Zack: and what has brought you to my office today with your temper up?

He was so calm like he didn't just throw a bombshell down my way.

Me: You.

He raised his eyebrows slightly amused.

Zack: me? what did I do to get your attention my lady?

The blush that crept up my cheeks might have been so visible.

I knew that my words might fail me so I removed the envelope from the bag and I removed the invitation card so I can show him.

Me: this.

He still kept a calm face on.

Zack:I can clearly see that and I sent it.Anything wrong?

My jaw dropped.Did he just brush it off like its nothing?

Me:Its a damn wedding invitation card.

Zack:I know.I designed.I asked a question.Anything wrong Taylor?

Me:yes.Everything is wrong.Tell me this is a joke.Please say its a joke.

He looked grim.

Zack:Its not.

Me:I understand....we're..we're not even dating for starters and I don't even know you.

Zack:you don't?I must say I'm offended after all this time we spent together.

Whaat?

Me:Lets talk this out then.Why me??

Zack:why not you?Look I'm going to be brutally honest and the decision is solely up to.

Me:I'm listening.

Zack:I've never done this before and look at it like a proposal.

Me:uhuh..

Zack:you do know I'm a man of God right?

I nodded.

Zack:and well ever since I've been seeing visions of my wife to be.

Me:I don't think I follow.

I bit my lip trying to put two and two together to get four.

Zack:well the gist of is that you're the woman I've been seeing in my dreams.

Whoa!!

Me:I must say I'm flattered but you're not serious are you?

Zack:do I look like I'm laughing.

Me:no-

I shut up and started to think.

Zack:look I honestly did not want to waste time with courting you and then you end up saying you can't.We end up being together for years without getting married and end up giving in to the temptation of sex before marriage and its all a big mess.

My brows furrowed.I honestly didn't think that far yet.

Me:so you thought to do this now?

Zack:Yes Taylor.You're the one.Its your decision in the end whether you accept or decline.J ust know I'm willing to do us if there will ever be an us.J ust think about it.Take all the time you need.You're not under duress or anything.

He said as he stood up and went to unlock the door and I could hear the sincerety in his voice.

I stood up and went to the door and our eyes locked.

He was towering above me before he spoke in a low voice.

Zack:think about it okay?

I nodded and he unexpectedly placed a soft kiss on my forehead before I walked out and he closed the door.

.

I was on the couch looking at the card.It was so nicely decorated but it lacked a woman's touch.

I chuckled at my thoughts.This has got to be one of the hardest decisions I have ever made in my life.

If I agree to this I'm agreeing to be a wife to someone and not just anyone but to a whole Prophet whose destiny has collided with mine.

I'm not sure if I'm read to step up to that plate.

Mom walked in on me and she just took the card from my hands.

Mom:you're getting married and you didn't tell me?where is the ring?

She took my left hand and inspected it.

Mom:I don't see one.

Me:thats a marriage proposal ma and I don't what to do honestly.

Mom:he sure does propose in a unique way.A wedding invitation.He has class.

I smiled as mom kissed my forehead.The exact spot Zack kissed.His lips were soft and emitted love from them.

I sighed.I'll sleep on it.

.

.

This is my final goodbye.Till we meet again lovie.

[03/12, 08:55] Lynne: WDC

.

38

.

TAYLOR

I woke up in the middle of night thinking about Zack's proposal. He is a great guy though, why me? but why not me?

It's just confusing. Let me accept it, if it doesn't work out we'll part ways amicably. I closed my eyes and let sleep elude me.

.

By morning I got ready to head to Zack's office. I was nervous and I wonder if there will be a ring and since they are a traditional and all will there be lobola negotiations?

Yoh!! Being royalty is also just plain annoying.

I greeted the receptionist and made my way to his office. How will he behave when we're married?

Is he a possessive? or is he sweet? of course he's sweet. Oh God!! I can't breathe.

I held onto the elevator door as I took a few deep breaths. Zack is fine. I'll get to know him and I should be happy he likes me. I mean not a lot of men would like me right? especially after what happened with

Jerome.

The elevator stopped and I stepped out. He doesn't have company does he? Maybe..

Okay I forced myself to stop my rambling thought. I knocked as gently as I could and I heard a faint come in.

I walked in with the invitation in hand.

He smiled and it lit the whole room.

Me: Hi.

Zack: Hey. Take a sit.

I sat down and thanked him.

I placed my intertwined fingers on my lap as I formulated what I was going to tell him.

Me: well....uhm. kgm kgm.

This was a bit nerve wrecking.

And he was giving me all his attention. He had literally stopped what he was doing to listen to me. Will he be this attentive to my needs when we're married? Maybe he changed his mind and I'm going

to embarrass myself.

He was silent and looking at me. Waiting for me to talk.

Me: Well I thought a-about the proposal.

I was stuttering now in front of this gorgeous specimen.

Me: And I-I accept. I will be your wife Zack.

And a smile tore his pink lips to reveal his pearly whites. He was breathtaking.

Me: I-I...

He placed a finger on my lips to silence me and I just kept my mouth shut. It was better that way.

He stood up from his chair and he helped me up from my seat.

Zack: Thank you Taylor. Thank you so much. You have no idea how happy you've made me. Rib of my rib and together we'll be one.

He said as he slowly placed his hands on my waist and looked straight into my eyes to seek approval

and I nodded.

My heart thumped like a road drill as I suffered his intense gaze. He was assessing each and every inch of me. I wasn't wearing anything fancy just my long white maxi dress and sandals.

Zack: Come to dinner with me.

He said in a husky voice and I nodded. We are getting married. It's real.

He placed a lingering kiss on my forehead and released me from his grip.

Zack: be ready at seven. I'll pick you up.

Me: of course. Uhm have a good day bye.

I left the office and I was still processing the fact that I agreed and he was just stirring some unknown emotions in me just by being in the same room as me.

This is going to be an interesting marriage I swear.

.

.

ZACK

And she said yes. As soon as she left I fist pumped the air. She agreed. She finally agreed to be my wife. No wonder she was made to be mine. Mine and no one else's. She has no idea how happy she has made me. And she just agreed to dinner. I will treasure that woman that's for sure.

I sat down and resumed with my work. I need to get work done and knock off early to prepare for the dinner I invited my lady to.

.

.

I stood in front of the mirror. I assessed my hooded eyes as I applied my lip gloss. I had my hair in a high ponytail and I wore a black dress that was knee length. It is appropriate for a Prophet's wife right?

Or will it be considered slutty?

I changed the dress and wore an ankle length dress that has only tight at my waist and flowy at the bottom with black high heels.

I wore diamond studs and my bracelet.

I was fine. I looked presentable and pretty. I was ready for the dinner. I grabbed my clutch bag and I went to the lounge to wait for my fiancé.

Why am so nervous around him but I've known him for some months.

I breathed in and out then I heard the door bell.

I walked to the door and there he stood in all his male glory. He was dazzling as his suit showed his muscles and his hair was slicked back.

His eyes shone as they landed on me.

He gave me white roses.

A light blush rose to my cheeks. I'm not used to such sweet gestures.

Me: Thank you. Let me find a vase to put these nice flowers.

He nodded and I put the flowers in water.

Me: all ready.

Zack: you look breathtaking.

Me:thank you.

I felt all giddy and it felt like a first date and in some kind of way it was.

He gave me his arm and I hooked my arm with his as he walked me to his car. Being the gentleman he was he opened the door for me and I sat in the passenger seat.

This was going to be a nice evening out.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

UNEDITED

[03/12, 08:56] Lynne: WDC

.

39

.

TAYLOR

He pulled a chair and helped me to sit and he didn't realise how nice it is but I did. I smiled in gratitude as he nodded.

He sat down and looked at me.

Me: So I-uhm. Tell me about you?

Zack: Can we order first?

Me: sure.

I looked at the menu and he called a waiter to us.

We placed our orders and the waiter walked away.

I was nervous and he just broke the tension by responding to my earlier suggestion.

Zack: I'm Zachariah Katlego Zulu and well you don't need to address me with my title Taylor.

Me: oh! Well I'm Taylor Tshepang Stella Radebe my prince.

I said bowing my head then lifting it up to smile at him.

He chuckled a bit as he took my hand in his and placed a kiss on my hand.

Zack:Then I'm honoured to be dining with you milady.

I laughed and grabbed the cloth on the table to hit him with it.

Me:And you are being like those princes from the medieval times.

Zack:That hurts princess.

He said in mick hurt as he held his heart.

I scoffed.

Me:as if.But pleased to meet you Mr Zulu.

Zack:and you won't drop the formalities will you?

Me:Nope!!

He just chuckled as I got to know him.He's not as uptight as I thought he was.He was cool.But will I love him?Am I capable of loving?we'll see but this is the guy I accepted to spend the rest of my life with.

The food came and it was so good.

Me:This *moan*Cheesy shrimp is so good.

He cocked an eyebrow looking at me.

Me:Try it.I swear I haven't tasted anything amazing like this.

I said as I lifted my fork to him to taste and he did.

Zack:Its good.I have to agree.You're now making me regret ordering steak.

Me:Seafood is love Zack.Try it one day.

Zack:I will.

We conyined with our meal and then we ordered dessert.

The whole evening itself was msgnificent.

When it was time he took my hand and led me out of the restuarant.

Me:tonight was amazing.Thank you.

Zack:you're welcome.

With that he was the gentleman he was and he opened the car door for me.

He drove till we reached the park.

Me:and?

Zack:J ust look at the stars.

I did and it was beautiful.Urg!He is just being so romantic.

Me:They are beautiful.

Zack:The constellation always did seem to intrigue me but they have nothing on your beauty.

Light blush covered my cheeks as I looked the other way so he won't notice.I looked back at him to find him staring at me intently.

He cleared his throat and took out a black box.

He took my palm in his hand and placed a soft kiss on it.

Zack:Wear this when you're ready.

Thats all he said before he dropped me off at home.Straight by the doorway.

Me:Thank you for tonight.

Zack:It was my pleasure.Have a goodnight.

He placed a soft kiss on my forehead and left.

This guy.Who knew he could be such a romantic?

I opened the door only to be met with the eyes of my darling mother.

Me:mom don't start.

Mom:You went out on a date and didn't tell me?

She was feigning hurt.

Mom:I can definitely feel the love Stella.

Me:You were not here and yes I was out.

Mom:was it him?

She asked wiggling her eyebrows.

Me:Mom what are you suggesting?

Mom:should we expect people back at Avalore?I know us Valenciès don't have these lobola negotiations like South Africans do but since its their tradition we allow them,so should I call your uncle?

Me: Mom!! Can I go sleep? and stop with the 20 questions all at once.

I said walking away.

When I got to the bedroom I opened the box and the ring was gorgeous. He actually bought a ring and it looked very expensive.

Gosh!

I tried it on my finger and it fit. Should I wear it? I don't know.

I took it off and placed it on my nightstand and I did my nightly routine before going to sleep.

.

.

THANDI

Well I was waiting to meet Taylor at our favourite café. Kelets o was with me and well it's been a week or so with her saying she's busy or out. Something along those lines really.

She walked inside the café and she was startled to

see us.You could see she had no intentions of meeting up with us.

Tay:Hi guys.

She said as she sat down.

Me:Hi.We just thought we would surprise you right Kele?

Kele:absolutely right.

Tay:well that was one hell of a surprise.I've been so busy these past two weeks.

Kele:we figured.

She called a waiter and ordered.

I quietly assessed her and noticed the sparkling object.I nudged Kelets o who's mouth hanged open when she saw it.

Kelets o being the hyper and annoying person she is she grabbed Taylor's hand and looked at the blue diamond ring on her finger.

Kele:wow!Wow!Who is it?

Tay:That cannot be revealed now.

Me:Its pretty and sparkly and shiny.And a whole diamond?how many carats?

Tay shrugged.

Tay:I don't know.

Kele:so you're getting married and didn't tell us?can we at least be bridesmaids?

Tay:I didn't think that far.We'll see if I want I white wedding.I honestly do not need the press.

Unknown to the three of them someone was already snapping pictures of Taylor.

.

I sincerely apologise.Fell while typing.This is yesterday's chapter.

Another chapter should be expected this afternoon.Thank you.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

UNEDITED

[03/12, 08:56] Lynne: WDC

.

40

.

TAYLOR

I went home and I just made a cup of tea. My life has been a rollercoaster and now I'm getting married. Its so surreal and I feel like I might wake up from this dream anytime.

There was a door knock and I went to the door.

It was Zack.

Me:Hi.

Zack:hey.

Me:come in please.

He came in and sat down.

Me:tea,coffee,juice,water?

Zack:Its fine.Can we talk?

Maybe he's breaking off the engagement I was not the girl of his dreams.I was starting to like him though.Its been two weeks and I was liking him.He was different.He never forced me to do things I don't want and he gave me space when I wanted it.

Me:sure.

I sat next to him and he took my hand in his.He's breaking up with me.

Zack:Taylor uhm...

He looked nervous.

Zack:well I was planning on telling my family about the engagement and then proceed with lobola negotiations.

I breathed a sigh of relief.He's not breaking up with me.Why am I already so attached to him?

Me:You want to tell your family when?

Zack: Tomorrow would be fine. I invited them to dinner at my house and would you like to come? along with your mother of course.

Me: I'll ask my mom but I'll be there.

He kissed the palm of my hand.

Zack: Thank you Taylor.

Me: Welcome.

He stood up and I walked him to the door.

He just kissed my forehead and left.

He made no sexual advances on me. No wonder I say he's different.

But what will his family say? I dated Jerome now I'm marrying the cousin? they will think I'm a bitch or a worse, a whore.

Oh God! Why did Jerome have to taint my reputation? why? why? why?

.

SAMANTHA

I was at Zack's office and the receptionist had said he was out.

I'm not giving up besides he needs a woman by his side honestly and currently there is none. He and Taylor these days haven't been seen going out together. Maybe she was not right.

The door opened and it was Zack. He had his sleeves rolled up and his muscles were flexing.

Me:Hi.

He shot me a cold glance as he walked to his seat.

Zack:Samantha what can I do for you?

Me:can we work this out?

Zack:work what out?

Now he's acting dumb.

Me:Us! Our relationship. We can go back to what we used to be. We were great together.

Zack:Samantha I honestly do not have time for your shenanigans so if that what brought you to my office please leave. You know your way out.

With that he opened his laptop and plainly ignored me with sparing me a second glance.

I left the office. We'll see Zachariah how long it will last till I am the one who is by his side.

.

ZACK

Samantha is just being a pest and these weeks Taylor has been looking great. I don't know if its the fact that we're engaged or what but even her fiery self I'll still accept.

She agreed and she's wearing my ring. Mrs Taylor Zulu. Has a nice ring to it.

I smiled.

Then out of nowhere Rose appeared.

Rose: Blessed.

Me: Angel.

Rose: For now you have succeeded but what is to come will determine your future. Be prepared.

With that she disappeared. She always comes and

leaves with cryptic messages. But by the looks of it something big is going to happen. Oh God! I just found my wife though.

.

.

TAYLOR

Around eight at night Zack called and we talked for a good 30 minutes before he hung up saying he has a prayer session.

I said bye and I felt a pang of jealousy. I used to be so close to God. Is He willing to accept a broken mess like me? I started drinking and gosh I can't remember the last time I prayed yet I'm going to be the wife to a Prophet. What kind of wife will I be?

I felt the tears fill my eyes as I got on my knees and my prayer was so broken. I'm not even sure it pleased the Lord. I was crying and asking for strength and forgiveness. I deserted my faith and God.

After what seemed like forever I closed my eyes

and this times the nightmares that haunt my dreams had let me have peace for the night for there was no sign of a nightmare blooming. For the first time in months I slept peacefully.

By morning I woke and I did the usual. This time I was going to check on Camilla's children home. Maybe sing a song or two for those sweet little souls.

I had coffee and some cereal. I left a note for mom informing her of the dinner and then I left.

I caught a cab since I don't have a car.

When I got there the staff was giving me looks and it was kind of odd. Then I caught a glimpse of today's paper.

"AVOLORIAN PRINCESS ENGAGED"

And there was a picture of me at the café yesterday with Kele and Thandi.

On top of that they took my hands pictures. How desperate can one be for a story.

My phone rang and I answered without checking the caller i.d.

Me:Hello.

Zack:Are you okay?

There was concern in his voice and it was so sweet.
I giggled.

Me:I'm fine darling.J ust that they are too desperate for a story.

Zack:But it will go public soon.

Me:akere you will be by my side so yah,I think I might handle it.Thank you for the concern though,its really sweet.

He chuckled at the end of the line.Kana he has a deep voice.

Zack:Really?

Me:yes really.I've got to go.Talk later?

Zack:of course.

Me:Byee!

Zack:Bye.

I was waiting for him to hang up.

Me:Byee!

.

[03/12, 08:56] Lynne: WDC

.

41

.

TAYLOR

I was shaking like a leaf as I glanced at the wall clock. My mother was just looking at me.

Me: Mom aren't you supposed to be getting ready. A-are you sure you're fine?

Mom: Tshepi you're shaking. Are you okay?

She attempted to get closer to me but I moved back as I calssped my hands together.

Me: I-I'm f-fine. Pea-peachy even.

As I said that, the doorbell rang and I went to open it.

And I was stunned.He looked so regal and hot.

Me:H-Hi.

Soon a frown covered his handsome features.

Zack:are you ok?

Me:yeah.Uhm-I-I-I.

He held my waist and walked me inside and I didn't notice he was holding flowers.

Me:I'll-uhm-

I took the flowers from him and quickly rushed to the kitchen to look for another vase for these flowers.

"Y-you're fine Taylor.You're good."

I kept on muttering that to myself and the vase broke.

Me:Oh God!

I went to the cupboard to look for a dustpan.This can't be happening.My head bumped on the shelf.

Me:ouch!ouch!

I felt hands holding me. The person turned me around and it was Zack.

Me: I'll g-get this done.

I was stuttering so much today.

Zack: Taylor calm down.

I smiled as much as I can.

Me: I'm f-f-fine. Y-you see?

He shook his head at me.

He led me to a chair and he sat down and placed me on his lap. This was new.

He just placed my head on his hard chest.

Zack: calm down love.

He was rubbing circles on my back and I felt the anxiety ease away. I can't believe I was so anxious I was on the verge of having a massive anxiety attack. Oh God!

And I made myself an absolute fool in front of Zack.

Zack: good now?

I nodded.

Zack:now tell me whats wrong?

Me:I-I.

I stopped.Not the stuttering.

Zack:calm down,your heart rate is starting to pick up again.Calm down.

He continued rubbing circles on my back.After a few minutes he spoke.

Zack:whats wrong?You were panicking.

Me:It was an a-anxiety attack.

He was looking at me intently.

Me:I-I get them when I'm scared and overthink on something.

Zack:and what triggered that today?

He was calm.This was hard and the stuttering was not helping.

Me:Meeting your parents.I c-couldn't,T-though I won't be able to face them.After my attitude,the

Jerome said and that they would think I'm cheap and-

He placed a finger on my lips.

Zack: They won't think that.

Me: Tell me my mind that. I'm good now.

Zack: you're not. Are you still up for the dinner?

Me: of course. Why not?

Zack: This isn't over.

He said softly. I stood up from his lap and he stood up.

He led me to the lounge and my mom breathed a sigh of relief.

Mom: are you ok baby?

She wanted to touch my cheek but I took a step back and released my hand from Zack's.

Me: Peachy mom. Can we go?

Zack nodded and I followed behind him and mom to his car.

He opened the door for me and I sat down.They hate me.I'm fine.I told them I'm perfectly good.I'm okay.Excited even.

.

ZACK

She was not okay and she was insisting she was.This is much deeper than I thought but she's my wife and I promised to love and care for her in my heart.

We arrived and I opened the door for her.

She got out.She was beautiful though.

I offered my hand and she smiled.

Tay:I'm good.F-fine even.Can we go in?inside?

I sighed.I just hope my family just doesn't do anything to make her state worse than it is.

I opened the door and we walked in.I only invited my parents and siblings.

Me:mom,dad.

I said as I placed a kiss on mom's cheek and

hugged dad.

Mom:And you didn't tell me you're engaged to this beauty over here.

My mom bypassed me and went to hug Taylor who was trying so hard to be normal.

Mom:Nice to see you again.And you're going to be my daughter-in-law.Exciting.

Taylor just nodded and smiled.I ran my hand through my hair.She's not herself.

And my loud sister was screaming as she went to hug her and my poor wife was horrified and she screamed.Kelets o must've misread it as excitement as well and in less that ten seconds Taylor was holding onto her chest struggling to breath.Kelets o was scared now as she looked my way as I walked to Taylor.

There were tears in her eyes as she was almost out fo breath and looked as if she could faint at any given moment.I gathered her in my arms.

Me:Babe breath for me.I need you to breath for me.

Tay:I-I can't.It hurts.I-I th-they.Don't l-like me.

Me:Love breath for me and calm down.

And she wasn't cooperative.I just carried her upstairs to my room and I sat down on the bed as I held her.

Me:I knew you weren't fine.

She wasn't even listening to me as she struggled to breath.

Me:Deep breaths love.They aren't here.Its me and you only.

As I said that she looked at me as she scrambled away from me.

Tay:D-don't h-hurt m-me ple-please.

I wanted to hold her but she backed away and she wasn't gettting better.

I just held her as she thrashed in my hands and she was crying.

I sat down still holding her.

Me:sssh!Its me Zack.I won't hurt you love.I won't

hurt you.

I said as I was craddling her.

She seemed to calm down and she was out like a light bulb.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 08:57] Lynne: WDC

.

42

.

ZACK

As soon as she fell asleep I called my sister to help her out of her clothes. I handed her one of my shirts and walked out.

When I got to the lounge I was bombarded with questions from the parents.

Mom:Is she okay?what happened?

Ava:Will my daughter ever be fine?

I just ran my hand through my hair.This,I don't know what to do but I can be there for her.

Me:I don't know.

Dad:you'll get through this.

Jonh just patted my back.Everyone left and even Kelets o.

I walked to my bedroom and she was sleeping so peacefully.

I just ran my hand on her cheek.

Me:Its going to alright love ok?

I looked at the time and it was time for prayer.

.

TAYLOR

I woke up when I felt the sun shining on my face.

I covered myself with the blankets and they had this musky and woodsy smell. They smelled so masculine. Mine don't smell like that. They smell like roses.

I pushed the blankets down and I looked at the room. This isn't mine. I glanced at the clothes and I was in a white shirt. Its not mine too.

My hair was tousled and I tried to remember yesterday. It all came back and left me in a state of shock.

The attack. It was so bad. I-I need to find Zack and apologise. Yes, an apology will do.

I walked down the stairs and I found him in the kitchen. He was in shorts. The prophet is hoooot! His abs and packs and that washboard stomach. And the v-line. I scolded my thoughts. That's not the matter at hand.

I cleared my throat and he turned to me.

Concern was laced in his eyes.

He dropped whatever he was doing and came to

hold me in a tight embrace.

Zack:Are you okay?

Me:I want to apologise for yesterday.I-I.

Zack:Don't apologise.We need to deal with this.

Me:There is honestly nothing to deal with.I'm fine.

Zack:you're not.

Me:I am.

Zack:Tshepang.

Thats the first time he called me by my second name and I don't think I liked the tone he was using with me.

Me:I really am.

Zack:you need therapy and if not you need to talk to someone.

I wiggled out of his tight embrace.

Me:I don't need to be talking to a stranger who won't understand who has never gone through what I went through.And I don't want to talk,it will only

make me relive the memories and nightmares.

Zack:you have nightmares too?God!Taylor.

Me:I honestly do not need a lecture from my fiancé don't you think?

Zack:Taylor I'm not lecturing you.I'm simply bringing suggestions to the table.

Me:Well I don't like those suggestions.

I said folding my arms on my chest.

Zack:Don't pout.

Me:I'm not.

Zack:But Taylor we have to do what's best for you.

Me:we?

Zack:yes we.As in me and you.Talk to me if you don't want a therapist.Yes I'm a man of God but I'm also human love.

Me:You might change your opinion of me.

Zack:I won't.I'm the one who made the commitment of being with you for the rest of my life.

Me:you won't let this go will you?

Zack:No.If you keep having random anxiety and panic attacks and even nightmares as you stated,I won't let it go.I just want you to be better.Let me.

Me:well you did put up a good argument.I'll think about it.How's that?

Zack:I can accept that for now.

Me:Thank you.And yesterday,they are never this bad.I-

he stopped me mid-sentence.

Zack:We'll deal with this ok?You'll be okay love.I promise.

Me:but what if I will never be?me?the wife of a prophet suffering from anxiety and depression.

Zack just walked to me and lifted my chin.

Zack:Look at me.We'll got through this together.I'll be there for you.Have I ever given you a reason not to trust me?

I shook my head.

Zack:Then trust me.ok love?

I nodded.

He placed kiss on my forehead.

Zack:I was just making breakfast.

Me:anything is fine.

I said as I went to sit on the stool.He went back to cooking.

Zack:You look great in my shirt by the way.

I felt the heat rise to my cheeks.

Me:uhm,thanks?

There was silence but the question was at the tip of my tongue.

Me:who changed my clothes?

I blurted out.

Zack:Kele did.

Me:oh!

Zack:you are my fiancée so I need to respect your privacy and all.

Me:thats considerate.Thank you.

We talked about random stuff and I figured that this man might be good for me.Now I feel so bad about the time I had disrespected him and gave him attitude.And he's older than me.

Oh God!I hid my face with my hands.Why did I have to do that?

I felt his hands on mine as the moved my hands from my face.

Our eyes locked and he was everything and more.

His lips slowly moved to mine and it felt like fireworks.

I wrapped my hands around his neck and he held my waist.Our tonues where in sync dancing to their own tune.

The kiss was passionate,pure and full of heartwarming emotions.Nothing sensual was in it.It even made The kiss was passionate,pure and full of heartwarming emotions.Nothing sensual was in it.It even made my toes curl.

"This smells.Oh,I th-"

we broke the kiss and that voice belonged to Kele.

Zack ran his hands through his hair.I realized he must do that when he's frustrated or something.

Zack:she has spare keys.

I mouthed an oh.

He gave me a smile though.

.

Yesterday's chapter.I was a bit exhausted so forgive me.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 08:57] Lynne: WDC

.

.

TAYLOR

We were having breakfast with Kele who kept on giving me and Zack weird looks. I sighed.

Me: If you have something to say just say it.

Kele: me? no. Ok, I didn't mean to walk in on you guys..urg! you understand.

Zack chuckled.

Zack: Long told you to start knocking.

Kele: well I didn't know you guys will be doing that.

She grumbled.

When breakfast was over I took the plates to the kitchen and got started on the dishes.

Maybe I should start looking for a job or something. I know I help out at the orphanage but I need a job. I need to swallow my pride and go job hunting regardless of the looks I'll get.

I headed to Zack's bedroom as I passed Kele who was on the couch.

I knocked. He might be undressed and all.

"Come in"

I walked inside.

Me: Hi. Any way I can get home without being noticed?

Zack: Do you want to sneak out?

There was mirth in his eyes and I smiled.

Me: Well, we aren't yet married and I shouldn't be here at this time.

Zack: and you're right.

Me: I know.

Zack: Can I take a shower first and we'll talk?

Me: heading to work?

Zack: on a saturday? no. Heading to church.

Me: oh.

Guess I can wait. He went to the shower and I exited

the room and went to Kele.

Kele:I didn't mean to scare you last night.

Me:its ok.Don't beat yourself up about it.

Kele:Its not.

Me:It happened.Water under the bridge,now stop sulking.

She smiled.

Kele:You're a good person.And I can't believe I get you for a sister-in-law.And you never told me you were engaged to my brother.

Me:Kele..

Kele:Can I be a brides maid?pretty please?Urg!!You'll be so gorgeous on the wedding day.I can't believe it.

She was screaming.This child is overdramatic.

Me:quit the dramatics yoh!My earbuds might explode.

She stopped.

Zack walked downstairs and he was such a sight to

behold.And I look like a mess.

Me:so how will I get home?

Kele:You can start by taking a shower and I can borrow you my clothes.

Me:great.

Kele led me to her room and I freshened up.

My hair was wet and it was starting to get curly real fast.And there is no mousse I can use to keep it in place.Might as well rock my curly mess for an hour or so.

Kele left me her pink maxi skirt and sandals.

I just wore that and I was good.I headed downstairs and I smiled.

Kele:you look good.

Me:thank you.

I glanced at the wall clock and it was around 11am.

Zack:Can I drop you off?

Me:sure.

He grabbed his car keys and we headed to his car. They are all expensive and I've never been the one to be that interested in cars.

I got inside and he started driving.

Zack: and as much as we try to keep our relationship under wraps you do understand it will be public knowledge sooner or later?

Me: I know but I prefer the latter.

He nodded. I loved the fact that his car windows were tinted.

Zack: I'll call later and think about that discussion we had in the morning.

Me: I will.

He captured my lips in a kiss and I held onto his shoulders. His kisses are addictive and scorching hot.

We pulled apart and he pecked my lips.

Zack: Bye love.

Me: Bye.

I said pecking his lips again.

I got out of the car and I swear I had a goofy smile plastered on my face.

I opened the door and mom just gave me a bone crushing hug.

Mom:I was worried about you.

Me:you knew where I was though.

Mom:of course I knew.I just want to know what happened yesterday.

Me:I'm fine mom.It was nothing.

Mom:that can't be termed as nothing.

Me:I will be fine.Stop worrying mom.

She just held my cheek.

Mom:I'll always worry.You're my only baby.I have the right to worry.

Me:I'm okay.I'm still alive and kicking mom.

She hugged me again.

Mom:I love you Taylor,don't ever forget that.

Me:Love you more mom.

She pulled back and I headed to my room.

I sat on the bed and sighed.My life is about to change drastically.

.

THANDI

I was just chilled in my room when Samantha decided to interrupt my peace.I rolled my eyes.

Me:What?

Sam:thats rude.

Me:sorry.Hi Sammy.

She rolled her eyes.

Sam:so our cousin.

Me:who's cousin?

Sam:I mean Taylor.

I shrugged.I don't know why she wants to know about Taylor.

Me:oh!she is just a good person.She has gone

through a lot and she can sing. That's basically Taylor.

Sam: I read in the papers that she's engaged.

Me: that? she is though. She refused to tell me who though. I did not know she was seeing someone. You want to attend the wedding?

Sam: yes, she is my cousin too and we're family.

Me: That's nice.

.

SAM

I don't know how I will get Zack to admit that he needs a helper. Ever since he accepted his calling he has changed. He's serious and always occupied with work. Maybe I can bring food for him. He might be in Church. I know he said I should stay away from him but at that time he was a playboy and now he's hotter and the kind of man you would want to settle in with.

I went to buy takeouts and the time was around six.

I went to his office and I heard talking and

giggling.Strange.

I didn't knock though,I walked in and he had a girl in his arms.

They looked cozy.

I just stared at them.Who is she?

.

TO BE CONTINUED.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 08:58] Lynne: WDC

.

44

.

EARLIER THAT DAY

TAYLOR

Well after Zack dropped me off I got really bored. The thing about therapy and talking, I don't know. I want to be fine but I'm not comfortable talking. It's like baring myself out for everyone to see the emotional scars and the demons I secretly fight everytime I wake up from a bad nightmare.

I just took my phone and went through all my social media accounts. I mean the media is trying to know who is the mystery man. I chuckled.

I wish them the best of luck honestly. I don't know when we'll go public because if and if I do decide on a wedding it will be an intimate gathering. No media.

Around five I just took my bag and stuff and decided to check on Zack. Maybe I can help with what he's doing.

I got to the church and headed straight to his office there. He was busy with work.

Me: Hey.

Zack: Hi love.

Me:whatchu doing?

Zack:sorting out everything.We have a revival week coming up and its going to be hectic.

Me:Really?thats nice.

Zack:And I would be grateful if you can come.

Me:Are you sure?I don't want to jinx it and all.I mean you have to preach and all that and maybe my presence might hinder that.

Zack:Trust me,you won't be.So are you going to be there?

Me:Of course.J ust because you asked nicely.

And he burst into laughter.Bruh!This nigga has everything I swear.

Me:Anyways I came here to distract you.

He raised an eyebrow.

Zack:describe a distraction?

Me:You're always so busy.

Zack:Tomorrow I do have church too you know.

Me:I know.Now stand up.

Zack:Why?

Me:J ust because your very gorgeous fiancée is asking very nicely for you to.

He stood up and I just walked to him.

Me:Lets dance.

Zack:There is no music.

I just wanted him to hold me.His arms are comfy and all.

He held me and we did a slow dance even though there was no music.

Zack:We should be doing this on our wedding day.

My head was on his muscled chest.

Me:I know.Your arms make me feel safe.

Zack:Its my duty to keep you safe.

He just stopped dancing and held me.I listened to his heartbeat and it was picking up a bit.

Me:This is nice.Everyday I hope that I won't wake up

and realise that all of this was just a long dream.

Zack:It isn't my love.I assure you.

Me:I hope so because I think that if I lose this,it will kill my soul more.

He placed a kiss on the top of my head.

Zack:You won't lose me.

Me:I feel like trouble is brewing.Something is going to happen and its not good.Its just this feeling at the back of my mind and it won't go away and I just don't want it threatening what we've established.

.

ZACK

What Taylor said couldn't be more true.She is the wife to a prophet and a healer herself.God just made me the most blessed man on planet earth.

Holding her in my arms just like this felt so right.She was the missing piece.

Me:have you thought about what we had discussed.

Tay:Babe don't ruin the moment please.

I just kept quiet. She seemed content. I just want to see her happy.

Someone cleared their throat and Taylor didn't bother moving.

It was Samantha. Now she's testing me, I swear.

She just walked inside my office. Being nice ain't going to get anything done will it?

Taylor finally lifted her head.

She gave me a questioning look.

Me: Love, this is Samantha, Samantha Tay-

Tay: I know her, she's a cousin.

She was still giving me that look.

Me: Samantha explain yourself.

Sam: I came to check on Zack.

Tay: ok.

She just said ok.

Sam: and why are you here?

Tay: no, just came to check on my fiancé.

She pecked my lips.

Tay:we'll talk about this later.I'm going home and sort this out.Bye love.

She took her handbag and left.

Samantha just looked at me.

Me:what brings you here?

Sam:I honestly thought we could have a shot,at us.

Me:There is honestly no us Samantha.What we had was never a relationship.That was years back and you knew I was a womanizer.

Sam:you're different now.

Me:And I'm getting married.

She got angry.

Sam:oh please!her?you can honestly do better.

Me:she is a better woman than you,thats for sure.

Sam:She was raped or whatever,I don't care if she's a damn princess.I'm also royalty Zack if thats what you want.

Me:thats my wife you're talking about.J ust leave my office before I do something I might regret.

Sam:do what?beat me for the truth?she is nothing but a useless girl and she's not your type.

Me:Woman get it through your thick skull I don't want you.I want her.She is my wife and you're nothing.And shut the hell up,you know nothing about that woman who has just walked out the door.I thought you were mature than this but you never grew up.Grow the fuck up Samantha and don't you dare,I mean don't you fucking dare get on my nerves by insulting my wife.Thats the woman who I want,if I wanted you I would've had you now get the fuck out.Get the hell out of my office.

She was shaking and held back tears but do I care?I honestly do not give a fuck.

Me:OUT!!NOW!!

She jumped and scurried out of my office.Thats why I never lose my temper,its never good and she just had to press my buttons and wherever Taylor is.God.I ran my hands through my hair

.

TBC

[03/12, 08:58] Lynne: WDC

.

45

.

ZACK

Oh God! Please forgive me. I never curse and never lose my temper.

I just left the office and drove over to Taylor's. It seems like I have some explaining to do.

When I arrived I just knocked on the door.

Her mother answered the door.

Me: Hi, is Taylor home?

She shook her head.

Ava: She left and hasn't come back.

Me: Mind if I wait for her?

Ava:sure,come in.

.

TAYLOR

I just went for icecream and I sat down.I called the only friend I have.

Me:Cammy.

Cam:And you witch disappeared.

Me:I'm offended but I've been off the radar for quite sometime.Soo..

Cam:Shut up.I know your ass is engaged.

I gasped.

Me:I wanted to tell you and I asked him to keep everything under wraps.

Cam:him?him who?As your only best friend I demand to know who is he?

Me:don't scream okay.

I could imagine her rolling her eyes at me.

Me:Urg!meet me tomorrow and we'll talk.

Cam:noo!where are you?Will can deal with the kids for just two hours.

Me:Will he be able to handle them?

Cam:Those quads are angels love.Give me the name.

I told her and shu hung up.

I just looked at my ring.It was beautiful.I don't know what happened earlier in his office but we'll talk it out right?I shouldn't be making assumptions about him.

Milla came and she sat down next to me.She immediately took my hand.

Cam:Its gorgeous.Put your hands down.

I did and she put hers on top of mine and snapped a picture.

Cam:Thats one gorgeous.You're finally getting married.My friend is getting married.Ka re wa nyalwa ngwana wa bomme.

Me:yep.Seems so.

Cam:who's the guy?I came here for that.

I hit her shoulder.

Cam:whaat?its the truth ya know.

Me:drum roll please!!

She hit the table.

Cam:dum dum dum!

Me:Zack!

Her mouth hung open.

Me:Milla!Camilla?Mrs Sokhulo?

Cam:who?

Me:Zack.

She was a bit shocked.

Cam:that piece of hot meat who is a Prophet is your fiancè?And you thought it was better to tell me now?Wa loya mogotsi,struu!

I laughed.

Me:woman calm down.

Cam:give the wedding details.I organised my wedding,it was awesome.How deep are his pockets?

Me:now you want to bankrupt my man?nope.

Cam:We have a wedding to plan!

We ordered more icecream.

Me:the lobola negotiations haven't taken place and we need to get that out of the way first.

Cam:so tomorrow is Sunday.Church first.Are you going to be sitting next to him tomorrow?

Me:No!nooo!

Cam:you're going to be a boring wife.I can already see it.

She said in a bored tone.

Me:Cammy you're not helping here.

Cam:MamProfeta.O ya bora.

Me:shut up!

Cam:but congratulations.We'll be expecting babies soon after the wedding and for now don't do

anything I wouldn't do.

She said with a wink.

Me:you're the worst friend ever.

Cam:And you love me.

Me:thank God I love you.

We walked to her car and she offered to drop me home.

Cam:I think you should sing at your wedding.

Me:I had that thought too.

Cam:we'll talk more about the wedding when we meet up.

She put in a jam.And we sand along.I missed her,the kids had been keeping her so busy.

Us:"You got my heart beat,skipping down sixteenth avenue,you got that uh,on me.Wanna see what under that attitude"

Me:And I'm glad I called.Bye sweetie.

Cam:bye bye.

She drove off and I saw Zack's car.Yikes!I need to buy my own but I need to find a job first.

I got inside the house.

Me:Hey mom.

Mom:hey honey,you have a guest.

Me:I know mom.

I looked at him.

Me:we can talk outside at the back?

He nodded and I led him out through the back door.

We sat on the bench.

Zack:Taylor I honestly don't know why she came to see me at that time.

Me:mhmm.

Zack:why does it sound like you don't believe me?

Me:I do believe you honey.

He sighed.

Zack:your cousin wanted us to get together and all.We dated a long time ago.A long long time ago

before I even accepted my calling. But I have you now.

Me: It's okay. I just wanted an explanation that's all.

Zack: and you didn't throw a fit.

Me: Hey! I'm offended. I don't throw tantrums Mr Zulu for your information.

He laughed.

Zack: Thank you.

Me: You're welcome.

Zack: I hate to raise this issue but I have to.

Me: Za-

Zack: The longer you stall the issue, the more it grows. You need to get help my love.

Me: and I will. I'm just not ready.

Zack: and when will you be ready? in a year? in five years? it needs to be addressed.

Me: I-I will.

Zack: You know you can talk to me right?

Me:I know.I just don't want you to see me in a different light.

Zack:I won't.

Me:you will.I just...

He held me.I love being in his arms.When we're married will we be doing Bible studies together?will we be praying and fasting together?that looks likes a nice future and I will try to get my spiritual life in order.I'll try.

Me:Can you sing?

Zack:me?I don't think it can be termed as singing.

Me:you can't sing in other words?

He shook his head.

Me:Katlego was bora.

Zack:No I'm not.I have a wife you sings so why would I know how to sing?

Me:Mxm!

He just smiled.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

[03/12, 08:59] Lynne: WDC

.

I had to lose you to find me,I had to hate you to love me-Selena Gomez

.

46

.

TAY

Me:Zack?

Zack:yes?

Me:Can we l-like make the engagement public after the negotiations?

Zack:as you wish

Me:thanks,by the way when will the negotiations be?

Zack:I think a week from now,my family is still sorting everything

Me:oh!

Zack:yes and do you want a big wedding?

Me:I want something intimate,family and relatives only

Zack:you'll get whatever you want

Me:whatever?

Zack:everything for you my love

Me:thank you,its getting late

Zack:I should get going,you keep well and I'll keep you in prayers,come to church tomorrow ok?

I nodded and he placed a chaste kiss on my lips and he let me go and left

I sighed.He's too good for me

I wend back inside and I bid mom goodnight,I wasn't even hungry

I said a short prayer to God.Maybe this is a step in the right direction

.

I woke up early and I'm going to church?my fiancé's church

I had a quick shower and I wore my black skirt and I tucked in my white shirt,I applied some mousse to tame my curls as I tied my hair up in a bun

I was done,I went downstairs and mom was making breakfast

Me.Morning ma

Mom:morning,heading to church?

I nodded

Mom:I think I'll be a little late but you're taking a step in the right direction you know that?

Me:I know,I'm honestly trying

Mom:and we see the effort

I just kept quiet and tried to eat

.

The gist of everything is that church was nice just that I've been disconnected from God for a long time and I'm still trying to reconnect with Him. Its hard because a part of me still hates God for what happened. I should be grateful that he didn't go that far but it was close and my mental health is all messed up because of it. And people might think I'm being overdramatic and seeking attention because he didn't actually rape me, the dude just distorted the image of how sex should be. He might have not done it physically but emotionally I'm scarred, being the sensitive being I am everything just went haywire in my brain and here I am a mental mess and getting married. Ironic. And I'm a healer? A fucked up one at it. How am I supposed to heal souls when my soul is the one that needs the healing? And I don't know if I'll be able to talk. I understand what Zack is saying but then I don't know if I'm ready to talk. Yes I get that I get these attacks and nightmares from time to time but maybe giving everything time I'll heal. Maybe I'll heal

overtime without exposing my thoughts to people. Maybe I'm overthinking all of this and it will depress me more.

I just closed my eyes and the tears just fell. God will I be a good wife to your servant? Will I be able to serve with him? Am I even good enough for him and lead besides him? He could have any other well bred woman and he chose me. This broken messed up canvas to be his dearly beloved, to love and cherish for the rest of his life. He looked so charismatic in church and I'm so scared that I will taint him, he's so perfect and I'm not good enough for him.

And they still say I'm a healer, I can't even heal my own scarred soul. I don't know if I can do this honestly.

The tears continued to slide off my face as I cried into my pillow. I already have everyone on their toes with me, the last thing mom needs is to try and console me.

I just looked at the ring on my finger.

I slid it off my finger and I looked at it. It was then I

noticed it was engraved in italics. It was just a 'Forever yours Z.K.Z' and a heart.

This man is so perfect and I don't deserve him at all. I don't.

The hiccups were so bad and I felt like I was losing my breath. Hot tears just came out my eyes and I just cradled myself on the bed. God I can't do this. I thought I could. I just can't. He deserves more. He needs more and I'm not more. I can't even fathom the idea of sex. I don't know when I'll give the ring back, he should forget I ever existed, I can never be a real wife to this man. I still can't deal with the stares I get when I walk in public and thank heavens the engagement wasn't public. I might just bring him pain and everything else but I don't think I'm capable of bringing happiness in his life. God! I need to let him go. That's the only rational thought in my head. I guess in these few weeks I spent with him my like developed into love. And I thought I would never find love again but I have to let him go, he doesn't need me.

I have to. I just don't want to complicate his life.

I just held the ring and it was gorgeous. I don't think he loves me, I mean who could love me like this? I don't even love me, I'm so hard to love. I closed my eyes as my sobs lessened and the impending headache arrived much earlier.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 08:59] Lynne: WDC

.

You tell me I overthink till I ruin a good thing, anything else? -Camila Cabello

.

47

.

ZACK

I felt uneasy and I made a mental note to go check up on Taylor the following morning because when I called her phone she wasn't answering. I gave up and did my daily prayer sessions.

.

TAYLOR

I woke up with one massive headache and I headed to the bathroom and I looked like a mess. I just splashed cold water on my face and my eyes were red and swollen. I just took my phone and I had three missed calls from Zack.

I switched my phone off. I can't get out of the room looking like this and I might do some job searching maybe tomorrow.

Mom: Tshepang?

Me: ma?

My voice was hoarse.

Mom: Are you going to come out for breakfast?

Me: I'm fine ma.

I closed my eyes and then I heard the door knock.

Me:Ma,I'm fine.

The door knock persisted and I begrudgingly went to open it and there he stood in all his male glory.

.

ZACK

Her eyes were red and puffy.

Me:you've been crying,whats wrong?

She was in her gown and she looked tired.

Tay:I'm fine.J ust woke up on the wrong side of the bed.

I just got inside her room and she was surprised but she closed the door regardless.

Tay:Katlego ke right.I'm okay.Plus I wanted to give you this.

She went to her dressing table and she took my hand.

I felt the metal against my palm.

She doesn't get it does she?

Me:Its yours.

Tay:you deserve someone better than me.I don't think I'll give you the happiness you deserve.

Zack:Taylor listen to me,you are everything I deserve and more and I don't want to fight you this morning so please get that thought out of your head.

Tay:I can't do this Zack

Me:Dammit Taylor,you're overthinking everything and you want to ruin what is perfect

Tay:I'm flawed

Me:just listen to me,you're perfect and I think its high time you got help.As much as I love you,you are just trying to be stubborn.

Tay:I'm not,I'm doing what is best for you

Me:and you're not me are you?Woman just stop thinking for others and being damn selfish

Tay:don't raise your voice at me

Me:I will if its what it takes for you to hear me,I will

be damned if I watch you walk out of my life
TShepang

Tay:I'm not good for you Zack,can't you just get it?

Me:I don't,stop being irrational Tshepang and I don't
want to do this with you

I held her left hand

Me:be a good girl and put your ring back on

Tay:you can't force me

Me:wanna bet?

She swallowed and she left it there on her ring
finger

Me:Good.I don't want to fight with you but if its a
fight you're spoiling for,you're going to get it woman

She just glared at me

Me:and those stares are far from helping your case

Tay:I hate you

Me:Thats not true and you know it.

She just wanted to hit my chest and I held her tiny

wrists and turned her to hold her from behind.

Me:You need help and you're being stubborn and throwing a tantrum now.I'm done tolerating it

Tay:Let me go Zachariah

Me:until you calm down,no!

Tay:stop shouting at me

I almost rolled my eyes.She loves the dramatics doesn't she?

Me:Calm down,woman

Tay:Let me go Zack

Me:calm yourself down Taylor and I'm not going to repeat myself

She stopped thrashing and she calmed down.I have my hands full with her

Me:now stop being stubborn

Tay:I'm doing whats best for you and I'm okay,for the hundreth time I'm ok

Me:don't lie to me Tshepang

Tay:Zack let it go,I'm not leaving you am I?You made sure of it

Me:you're just trying to be unreasonable and you're going to get help,if I have to be the bad guy of the story I will

I was still holding her

Tay:So you want to subject yourself to life with me?

Me:I would rather fight with you every other night than spend a single night with someone other than you

Tay:Zack..

Me:you're calm now?I don't wa repeat of today's event again

Tay:I don't want to talk about it

Me:Don't degrade yourself,you just need to try to talk about it even if its not everything

Tay:But you deserve better

Me:and I won't have none of that,your little tantrums are starting to annoy me and if you won't talk to me

talk to someone,a professional at it

Tay:its not that easy

Me:I want my little healer to be alright and you're the one person delaying your healing.How long are you going to let whatever happened dictate your life?How long are you going to spend sleepless nights fretting about your imperfections when you very well know you're perfect and life just threw you a curveball?How long my love hm?

She just turned and placed her head on my chest

Me:no more tantrums and fits?

Tay:I can't promise that,you're too good for me

Me:ssh!I said none of that.I'll pick you up at three

Tay:Whats happening at three?

Me:you're getting help

She moved away from me

Tay:you don't get to make decisions for me

Zachariah!I'm not ready to talk

Me:you've been stalling and this is destroying you

little by little

Tay:I'm still whole aren't I?

Me:You hate yourself and think you're doing society a favour by hiding in a little shell and its not healthy

Tay:J ust.Get.Out.

Me:Be ready by 3 and I'm not negotiating Tshepang.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

MENTION

SHARE

[03/12, 09:00] Lynne: WDC

.

Everything is crshing down.Everything I had known.When I wonder if I'm all alone-Lauren Daigle

.

.

TAYLOR

With that last statement Zack walked out of my room and I just sat on the bed. I don't want to relive that horrible night and all those nightmares.

But I did as he asked and I just took a shower with tears streaming down my face. I just tried using makeup to get rid of the puffy eyes though I rarely wear makeup.

I walked out and headed to the kitchen and I found my breakfast in the microwave.

"Are you okay?"

I nearly jumped and I held my chest as I saw my mother.

Me: I'll be fine. Stop worrying yourself ma.

Mom: how can I stop worrying about my only daughter, Tshepang you need help.

Me: Why is everyone suddenly addressing me as Tshepang and putting help in the same sentence?

Mom:you do need help and Tshepang is your name mind you.

Me:I'm not ready.

Mom:you'll never be ready but force it.You will be glad you did it in future.

I just kept quiet as I sat on the kitchen stool and ate my breakfast.

After that I just went back to my room and sat on my bed.I looked at my stuff.I picked my guitar and looked at it.Its been a while since I played any instruments or sang a piece.My voice must be raspy from all the long weeks of no practice and the crying I've been doing lately.

I sat on the floor and started hitting some chords trying to find a certain rythm and a tune.

I'll try to look for work tomorrow.When I'm not being forced into therapy and when I look more pres entable.

Me:Here goes nothing.

I breathed in and out.

Me:"I keep fighting voices in my mind that say I'm not enough. Every single lie that tells me I will never measure up.

Am I more just a sum of every high and every low. Remind me once again just who I am because I need to know."

I sang the song and it touched deep. It hit a nerve and I just sang and played with tears.

Me:"You say I am love when I can't feel a thing. You say I am strong when I think I am weak. You say I am help when I am falling short. And when I don't belong, you say I am yours."

I sang till the end.

Me:I'm okay. I can go on.

I wiped my tears and continued with my one man music session.

.

ZACK

I arrived at the office and my father called.

Me:father.

Dad:are you okay?

Me:Good dad.

Dad:you don't sound ok.

Me:just a little stressed but nothing I can't handle.

Dad:the lobola negotiations.Do you want them to go on?

Me:of course father,why ask?

Dad:I just had to double check to make sure you're not getting cold feet.The letter will be sent tomorrow.

Me:thats good.Dad can we talk later?

Dad:sure.

He hung up and I took my phone and made a call.

Me:is this Dr Simpson's office?

Her:Yes sir,how can I help?

Me:I would like to book an appointment with the Dr for 3pm.

Her:Names?

Me:I'm booking for my wife.

Her:of course sir.Can we have her names then?

Me:Taylor Radebe.

Her:I booked her in,pleasure speaking to you sir.

Me:Likewise.

I hung up and sighed.I just hope she does not throw another tantrum.She's such a handful if she would just admit that she needs help everything would work itself out but she is so hard headed.

I got on with my day's work.I'll got pick her up around two so we could grab a bite first.I started with my work for the day.

.

TAYLOR

My voice was hoarse and raspy.I overdid it but I couldn't stop.The songs just kept on coming and the tears dried out eventually.That was refreshing.

I went to the bathroom and washed my face.The

makeup was washed away but its fine.

I moisturised my face and my eyes looked like they had seen better days.

I sat indian style on the carpet and cleared my throat. My voice is hoarse and raspy now but I think I'm going to exhaust it more.

I just hummed a tune and started playing it on my guitar.

The door to my bedroom opened and I hadn't realised how much time had passed.

Zack:hi.

I just nodded my head.

He sighed as he helped me up on my feet.

Zack:I guess you're ready.

I reluctantly agreed. I didn't want therapy.

He led me out of the room and he said bye to ma and I just waved.

My voice must be horrible.

Zack:I assume you're hungry,your mom said you haven't come out of your room since after breakfast. I mentally rolled my eyes.My mom is selling me out. I just shrugged.

He parked his car by a restaurant and he got out before he opened the door for me.

He led me inside and he ordered his meal.He looked at me expectantly and I just remained silent.He ordered the same meal as his for me.

Zack:Taylor are you going to give me the silent treatment now?

I cleared my voice.

Me:I-

I sounded like a choked frog.

He looked a bit surprised before he chuckled.

I rolled my eyes this time.

I pointed to my throat and made an X with my hands to show that I have no voice.

Zack:What happened?

I took my phone and indicated the music app.

Zack:oh!

Me:V-voice n-none.

Zack:Its okay if you keep silent,you sound like a dying cat.

I glared at him and he smiled.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 09:00] Lynne: WDC

.

Always though I was hard to love till you made it seem so easy,seem so easy-Camila Cabello

.

49

.

TAY

A dying cat?wow!

The meal came and since I couldn't talk there was silence.

The silence wasn't awkward it was comfortable and I like it.

When we were done,he just helped me up and we left the restaurant.

Not forgetting that he has a conference this week and he asked me to attend.I mean each and everyday so I'll do that since I haven't found a job yet.

He drove to where he said he'll take me to.I'm not ready but he forced me and I can't talk.

Zack:Afternoon,we're here for 3pm appointment.

The receptionist of the small practice was stupefied.Its not everyone someone gets to meet

the prophet face to face.I know.

Her:S-sir.

Zack:Is the Dr ready for us?

Her:of c-course sir.

He was so serious and the girl didn't know what to do.

Thats the face he gives everyone and I saw it firsthand when he came to our village and said my singing was nice.Nice nje!I almost snorted and he gave me a glare.

He led me to the office of the Dr.I don't even know her or him.

We knocked and we found the Dr sitting on her chair.

She was shocked to see Zack too.

Dr.Afternoon.

He nodded and I almost rolled my eyes.I should stop walking around with Zack if he scares people this much.

Dr:well,you two have a seat.

She said leading us to the couch.

Dr:well I'm Dr Simpson and I guess I will be your therapist.

I nodded.

Zack:Let me leave you to it,I'll wait outside.

He placed a kiss on my cheek and walked out.

Dr:well..

I could tell she was surprised.Not everyone knows that me and him are engaged and all.

Dr:We can start by saying your name.

I took the notepad from my bag and a pen and jotted my name.

Dr:well Taylor pleasure to meet you.

I'm glad she does not fawn over our titles and social status and thats a relief.

I replied still in writing.

Dr:If I may ask you can't talk?

I shook my head.

I wrote down "I can just that I overused my voice during my singing session and it's all raspy and croaky. Apparently I sound like a dying cat."

She laughed at the response.

Me: I-I'm serious.

I cringed at the sound of my voice and the doctor laughed some more.

Dr: Well I recommend you let it rest, so tell me about you.

I wrote down my age, occupation and that I'm engaged.

She nodded.

Dr: Well, this is going to be a bit difficult looking at the fact that you can't talk and for now I don't want to dwell on what brought you here because I want you to verbally express that. Tell me about your hobbies, what makes you happy and all that.

I smiled. Though I have bad days there are things that make me happy.

I wrote all those things down and the good doctor smiled.

Dr:Your fiancè makes you happy?

I nodded.I won't tell him but he does.A lot.

Dr:we're getting somewhere.And you also noted that you sing.

I nodded.

Dr:then I assume you have a great voice,you must sing for me in one of our sessions.

I nodded.

She quizzed me on the things I said I liked and that.It was nice,I guess.Even though he forced me to come here it was nice communicating with someone.

When we were done she asked me to set a specific date for our sessions and time.

I'll think about it.

I walked out and Zack was waiting.

Zack:how was it?should we change and get you

another?are you comfortable with her?

I just gave him a thumbs up and he smiled and pecked my lips.

Zack:then I'm glad,we should go then.

.

[A WEEK LATER]

I had a session today and today was the last day of the conference.

It was starting at 6 and I had to go to therapy at 3.

Me:mom,I'm going.

Mom:alright,be back early so we won't miss church.

Me:sure.

I walked out and caught a cab.

.

Me:Dr Simpson.

Dr:glad to see you got your voice back.

I chuckled.

Me:Its back alright.

She led me to the couch and I got comfy.

Dr:soo what brought you here?

I sighed.

Me:my fiancè practically dragged me here.He booked the first session.

Dr:mind if I ask why?

Me:apparently I need help and I'm not healing.

Dr:help?hmm.Noted.Go on.

Me:I have occassional panic and anxiety attacks and stuff.

Dr:what causes them?

I closed my eyes.

Me:I'm not ready to talk about that.

Dr:okay.So how do you feel when you get these attacks?

Me:Useless,I can't even breath and it feels as everything is crushing down on me.

Dr:I see.Have you ever had therapy before?

Me:never.This is the first time and everyone is practically forcing me to relive the whole ordeal.

Dr:at this moment am I forcing you?

Me:No!You dropped the subject when I asked you to and they never drop the subject.

Dr:isn't it that they are concerned about your wellbeing?

Me:I get it doc,I do but I'm fine.Time is supposed to heal these things is it not?

Dr:It is but deep wounds can't be healed with time,only talking and accepting what happened is essential to heal.

I nodded.

Me:I see but I'm not ready to talk and...

I sighed.

Me:its exhausting.

Dr:It always is,so are you ready to face your demons head on?

Me:i don't know.I honestly dont.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

MENTION

SHARE

[03/12, 09:00] Lynne: WDC

.

50

.

TAYLOR

I was in the office with my therapist.

Me:I won't be able to attend this week's therapy sessions

Dr:is there a reason for that?

Me:My lobola is during the course of this week and I have to be home

Dr:well all the best Princess

And she winked

Me:and here I thought you didn't know me

Dr:I just want you to be comfortable with me

I laughed.She is good

Dr:since I won't be seeing you for a whole week a song line would be a good way to say goodbye

Me:haibo doc?

I faked shock while holding in my laughter

Dr:Taylor you promised

Me:fine

I just chose an easy going song but one that would be able to portray a certain emotion

Me:"I'm saying baby please have mercy on me

Take it easy on my heart

Even though you don't mean to hurt me,you keep tearing me apart.Would you please have mercy,mercy on my heart."

I stopped there and she was shell shocked

Me:that was just a chorus Doc.

Dr:wow!that was wow

Me:thank you doc,you asked for a song and singing
a whole song is..

Dr:Your emotons can be felt through the song,I
don't want to call it talent because yours is way
beyond that

I smiled and said my goodbyes to her

I caught a cab that dropped me at home

Me:mama I'm home

Mom:how was your session?

Me:nice,have you finished packing?

Mom:yes and you?

Me:been done

Mom:you won't see him for a week

Me:is it tradition?

Mom:they are traditional baby and their rules have

to apply

Me:if you say so,what else do I have to know about Zule traditions?

Mom:a lot but Radebes are not zulu?

Me:really?

Mom:They are Xhosa

Me:So I have to wear like a Xhosa attire?

Mom:we'll discuss it at home,we have a week to prepare and they will only be coming on next week Friday

Me:what time is our flight to Avalore?

Mom:Around 8pm,we're taking the late one

Me:fine by me,this is going to be exhausting,can I go out?I'll be back after two hours

Mom:where are you going?

Me:out ma,see you after two hours

I took my phone and some cash and walked out of the house,I know I just came back but I can at least

go say bye,I'm leaving the country and will be back after around two weeks

I went to the office and well I was let up

Me:Cammy?

Cam:Hey!what brings you here?

Me:I came to say bye and see you after two weeks

Cam:negotiations?

I nodded

Me:But you're my matron of honour at the wedding.It might be a small gathering though

Cam:its your wedding sis,whatever you want.

Me:See you when I see you soul sister

Cam:Video call me

Me:will do so and say hi to my munchkins

Cam:will do so

I said bye and walked out.The best for last right?

I went to his place of work and I asked the receptionist if he's in today.She nodded and asked

that I make an appointment with him. I lied through my teeth and said he's expecting me. She gave me a weird look.

I walked to the elevator and everyone on that floor was giving me weird looks. Maybe they think I'm just trying to worm my way back but I'm not

The elevator stopped at the desired floor and I walked to his office.

I knocked on his door

His baritone and deep voice nearly got me in a trance as he said come in.

I opened the door and he was so intent on whatever he was doing.

He didn't even look up. His shirt sleeves were rolled up and they revealed his muscled arms and I could see the muscles flex. He is such a specimen

Me:hi

He finally did look up and a huge smile tore from his luscious lips.

Zack:love

Me:I didn't know you were busy

Zack:well you're a much needed distraction

He stood up and led me to the couch

We sat down and he took my hands and kissed my knuckles

Zack:how was therapy today?

Me:it was good

Zack:seeing some progress?

Me:Its going well,thats all you need to know

Zack:Good cause I want to see you get better

Me:thank you

Zack:for what?

Me:not giving up on me

Zack:I'll never

Me:so this week..

Zack:I'll traditionally be making you my wife

Me:you seem excited about it more than me

Zack:I am love

Me:and I won't be seeing you for more than a week

Zack:you'll be missing me?

Me:very much

Zack:Patience love,patience

I nodded and he just smiled at me

Me:so this is goodbye for now?

Zack:you can still call

Me:but you won't be holding me

He laughed.God his laughter!!

Zack:woman calm down,its only a week or so.You're going to have a problem once I'm gone for months

Me:months?

Zack:yes months now don't stress your pretty little head and relax

Me:will try

Zack:My little healer

Me:whatever Prophet

He stood up and just opened his arms for me.I
walked straight into those muscular arms and he
held me so gently

Me:I love you Zachariah

Zack:I love you too my love

Me:and I'll be missing you but I'll be strong

He laughed

Zack:you sound as if you're leaving forever

Me:whatever

I smiled on his chest,he is so buff though

Zack:you don't want to let go do you?

Me:no besides you're warm and like a teddy bear

Zack:woman,I ain't no teddy please

Me:whatever you say Mr Prophet

He just lifted my chin and he smashed his lips on
mine.

I hooked my arms around his neck and he held my

waist.

He smiled in between the kisses

Zack:God I love you woman

.

TBC

[03/12, 09:30] Lynne: WDC

.

51

.

TAYLOR

Me:mom I'm back

Mom:about time,we should be heading to the airport

Me:let me go get my stuff

We finally caught a cab and we waited an hour in the airport till our flight was called

This was going to be one long flight,might as well sleep throughout the flight

.

ZACK

She left and she seemed excited though she tried not to hide it. She is slowly coming back.

Well the elders said that I'm not actually needed and that they will bring my bride home. And by that they mean after the negotiations she gets to live with my parents till the traditional wedding. After the traditional wedding that's when I can see her. This is going to be one long process.

.

TAYLOR

Avalore was gorgeous as usual and it was daytime that side. The long flight was tiring but I'm home.

The royal guards opened the gate for us and well Grams was waiting for us by the door.

Me: hey

Gram: My sweet Stella, you're home

Me: I am

she squeezed the living daylight out of me and she went to hug mom

Gram:your cousins are inside,we need to celebrate your impending wedding princessà

I nodded and the servants took our luggage as we headed inside the gorgeous palace

I curtsied when I saw the king.

He just brushed me off

Sean:Stop with the formalities Princessà

Me:apologies señor Valenciè

He smiled and gestured for a hug.I just hugged him

Gram:well Sean you can let her go and let her go see her granpa

Me:Is he well?

Gram:He is weak but will be ok

I nodded and followed my grandma upstairs.

My grandfather was just in bed and he was reading a book or something

Me:Gramps

He looked up smiled and I went to hug him.

Gramps:Como estas?(how are you?)

Me:Bien(good)but you don't look good.How are you?

Gramps:Holding up Princessà

Me:Will you still be able to attend my wedding
gramps?

Gramps:Yes princess,I'm strong

Me:will you be dining with us?Granny said almost
the whole family is here to celebrate with us,so dine
with us?

I smiled sweetly at him and he had no choice to
agree.

Me:thank you

I hugged him one more time,guess I'll be here for
some time then.

My phone beeped and I saw the message

I smiled and decided to call

Me:Now who's missing me?

Zack:Taylor shut up

Me:How are you?

Zack:good and don't forget to pray love

Me:yes babe,we'll talk when I'm all settled.Love you

Zack:Love you to Princess

Me:everyone is calling me princess today well thank you señor

Zack:and she thinks she now knows Spanish

Me:whatever

I was smiling like a retard at the end of the line

Zack:We'll talk princess,bye

Me:adios love

I hung up and held the phone to my chest.This guy though.

I walked to my bedroom and I sensed a presence,I decided to be brave and I walked in.

It was a woman,she was sitting on the bed.

Me:Excuse me but who are you?

It came off as rude but that was not my intention.

She faced me and I just kept my smile on.

Sam:Taylor uhm,I came to apologise for my behaviour the other day and well we're here because of the wedding negotiations

I nodded but I was still lost

Sam:Besides your grandma asked for the family to come celebrate prior to the negotiations.Congratulations by the way

Me:Of course thank you

Sam:a hug?

Me:sure

We hugged and she let go

Sam:see you downstairs

Me:alright,let me freshen up

I was still puzzled by her behaviour.But let me not read too much into it but it was weird as hell

I changed clothes and wore a white summer dress and sandals and let my hair loose. I grabbed my phone and went downstairs where there was a lot of chatter, how big is this family kante?

I saw mom's twin and she throwing daggers at mom. I still don't understand her animosity towards mom.

I walked to my only aunt.

Me: hi

She faked a smile

Eva: Hi Taylor and congratulations on getting married

Me: thank you and thank you once again for coming

Eva: you're family dear and we do anything for family sweetheart

I flashed a smile and headed to the kitchen, seems like my grandma was serious about this family thing or maybe she just needed an occasion to bring the whole family together and my negotiations were used as an excuse.

What Samantha said then clicked.

They Zulu family needs to identify their wife and well I need to walk out all covered with my female relatives so that they can choose the right wife.

Go figure so they need to choose from over five girls. These people want to confuse Zack's family I swear but I trust they know their bride.

I didn't feel like interacting with people at the moment so I decided to chat up with Camila and that one is a whole mood I swear.

And she reminded me that I need to seriously plan my wedding and stop stalling the planning.

Maybe she is right. This is so going to be a stressful two months I swear.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

[03/12, 09:32] Lynne: WDC

.

52

.

TAY

I finally dragged myself to my room and I closed my eyes when I got to the door.

I checked my phones and it was around ten.

Everyone seemed happy for me which is also weird.

Me:God,help me get through this week.I don't trust some of my family for real.

I sat on the bed and I just touched my amulet.

I headed to the bathroom for a quick shower and I changed into my pyjamas.

I called Zack,I do hope I won't be disturbing him.Its been a while since I prayed a whole full prayer.

Zack:love

Me:hi,hope I'm not interrupting you or anything

Zack:you're not,whats wrong?

Me:Its nothing.Forget it

Zack:Tshepang

And that tone

Me:Its a really immature request,I'm sorry that I bothered really

Zack:And you can't call for nothing,out with it woman

Me:Can you pray with me?

There was silence.I knew it was immature

Zack:of course

Me:I-wait,what?

Zack:Yes I will pray with you

Me:really?

Zack:yes

Me:its just been a while since I ever prayed and I don't know wher to exactly start cause God,Zack I still do a lot of bad stuff

Zack:and we'll get through it,we're in this together

now are you ready my little healer?

Me:let me breath first

Zack:you do love the dramatics

Me:I'm good

Zack:so we can start?

Me:of course

Zack:do you have your Bible with you?

Me:honestly?no

Zack:your laptop is with you that side?

Me:yeah!

Zack:I'm hanging up and I'll skype you and use the Bible app on your phone Taylor if you don't have one,download one now

Me:Yes Prophet

He hung up and he was so serious.I opened my laptop and well true to his word he skyped.Gosh!He is so handsome

Zack:Tshepang,enough staring now the app?

Me:of course I found it

I waved my phone in front of my computer screen

Zack:Notepad,pen,pencil?

Me:is this a sermon?

Zack:Tshepang!

Me:yes sir!yes sir!

I just jumped and went to my bag to get what I was asked to get

Me:I have what you asked

Zack:we can start now.

He is so serious when it comes to God and maybe I need that as motivation to get my spiritual life in order

.

My eyes hurt,my voice must be just be strained.

We did a Bible study for two whole hours and man I had to listen attentively and now I have been given verses to meditate on.

We sung worship songs and he assisted me in prayer. I went to sleep around 2am in the morning and its ten, I'm still exhausted.

Me: God thank you yet for another day

I got out of bed and headed to the bathroom. I did my whole hygiene process and I decided on jeans and an oversized tee. Royalty or no royalty I'm still Tshelang

I headed downstairs and it seems everyone had breakfast without me but oh well

I headed to the kitchen for just cereal

Mom walked in

Me: morning

Mom: you look tired are you ok baby?

Me: Good ma

Mom: Tasha is coming here in the afternoon to take your measurements.

Me: measurements?

Mom: African attire, the Zulus are coming on Friday

Me:of course ma

My grandma walked inside the kitchen and said
there is a family meeting

I can smell drama

We followed him and everyone was in the lounge

Grams:Your grandfather will be here in a few

It was I,mom,Eva and her husband and Sean.

Granddaddy walked in and he sat down

Gramps:Well I noticed a detail when I read the letter
from the Zulus

Oh God!

Gramps:Ava how come Taylor's surname is Radebe?

There was an audible gasp and I almost rolled my
eyes,mom was unfazed.I guess she knew the truth
would be out eventually

Mom:because she is a Radebe

Sanele's eyes nearly popped out

Grams:how?

Mom:cut the long story short,I was seeing Sanele secretly and he broke up with me and got it on with my sister.He left me pregnant so yeah

Mom just said it as if its nothing and Eva was giving her a mean look

Sean:now Eva and Elena calm down

Eva:calm down how when I hear my sister was sleeping with my husband

Mom rolled her eyes.

Grandad and Grandma decided not to intervene and I think so too.I hate confrontations but I think from this one we'll get the truth.

Mom:oh please you talk as if I was shagging him when you were married.He left me because you lied to him about me and him being a fool believed you instead of the girl he fell in love with,right Sanele?

All eyes were on Sanele and he cleared his throat.

San:how sure are you that she's my daughter,I'm not the one who cheated

Eva smiled and mom smiled wider

Mom:I cheated right?Irony.You went after her after she lied.And she threatened my life so mom and dad,I ran because my dear sweet sister was a threat to my very existence and yes Tshepang is the rightful Radebe Princess she was born first but not that she needs the title,she is going to be a Zulu princess soon

Eva was fuming and Sanele was stupefied

I guess he is just digesting all of this

Me:Well,I-I c-can I say something?

Not the stuttering again.God no.

I sat back down and closed my eyes.

Me:C-can I be ex-excused from all of this?

Eva:no,you're the cause of this squabble

Mom:she is not and don't raise your voice at my child sister

My breathing became heaved and my heartbeat was accelerating.

Me:I-I'm I h-hav-ee to

Mom:somebody call the dr please!!

.

TBC

[03/12, 09:33] Lynne: WDC

.

All I know is you,heal me when I'm broken,heal me
when I'm broken-Camila Cabello

.

53

.

TAY

Mom gave me a glass of water and I took it with
shaky hands.

Mom:Breath baby,breath

I didn't go full mode panic attack but it was close.

Me:Ex-excuse me

I walked out and literally ran up the stairs to my
room.

I closed the door and took a few deep breaths.

Me:I'll be fine God I'll be fine right?nothing can't and should not go wrong.

.

SAM

Their meeting ended and my uncle's wife came to my room.

Me:is anything wrong?

Eva:Taylor is Sanele's daughter

My jaw dropped,so it means she is directly my blood cousin.Wow!Royalty from both angles neh!Mother is a princess,father is a king and she's marrying a prince.One I should've married.I hate her.

Eva:She is weak marn!She couldn't breath like who gives a crap about your breathing problems

Me:what I said but no,I became the wicked witch of the west and earned myself an insult

Eva:she doesn't deserve him,I hope they choose you thinking they chose Taylor at the

negotiations.You're strong and a good girl

Me:thank you

I hope so too.I never really liked Taylor so yeah she can sing.What else can she do besides whoring herself to a man and then crying rape?

Me:whats up with her singing?

Eva sighed

Eva:Its a rare gift passed down in the family.One special with a pure heart,a kind one can only get the gift in its full force

Me:full force?

Eva:The gift is meant to heal,heck even the words of that person are meant to heal once they tap into it

Me:so she's a healer?

Eva:seems so but she's so weak.Even my sister is stronger than her,I wonder how she got it even.I thought my daughters would have the gif but no.Even Sean's kids don't have the gift.But its been wasted on her

Me:she can't use it can she?

Eva laghed.

Eva:weakling!she can't.

I smiled.I have an idea.

.

TAY

I was calm and I was meditating on the verses Zack gave me and they really helped my mental state.Calm.Renewal of the mind.Until a door knock disturbed my thoughts.

Me:I'm coming

I opened the door and it was Tasha.

She hugged me

Tasha:Princessà,lets discuss your dresses

Me:dresses?

Tasha:yes!We have one for the negotiations apparently it should be African print and not too much.We have one for the traditional wedding yes,it

should match with your groom's attire so we need your mother-in-law's input on that one. Then we have the bridesmaids dresses, matron of honour, reception dress and I want to design you a dress for the honeymoon, in case you go out somewhere special.

Me: come in, that's a whole lot of dresses you're designing.

She walked inside my room and I eased myself on the rug while she sat on the couch.

Tasha: now princess we need to design one for the negotiations this Friday. I think blue.

Me: Tasha, surprise me. I have no idea on what to wear for the negotiations so dazzle me.

Tasha: that's why I like working with you. Let me take measurements. Who knows maybe you've gained weight.

I chuckled.

Me: I don't really gain weight, it just sticks at certain places

Tasha:yes,like your tummy.Exercise,you need a flat stomach for the wedding dress I have in mind

Me:really?Its been a while.

My mind then took me to that time I bumped into Zack when I was first new in that neighbourhood and I was in a sports bra and shorts and he looked so hot.

Tasha:Princess focus.

Me:oh sorry

After she was done she smiled.Do I really have a pot belly?Oh God!

I'll try to exercise later then.

I went to my laptop and started to do my reserach on weddings.

I want an intimate one,not one I'll invite unnecessary people.

I took out a notepad and got busy with the wedding.

My phone rang.

Me:Mrs Zulu speaking hello

Zack:And I like the sound of that

Me:hey love

Zack:hi,how are you?

Me:fine just planning

Zack:the wedding?

Me:yep

Zack:don't involve me in anything

.

SAM

I was about to knock on Taylor's door but it was slightly open.

She looked like she was talking to the phone.

Tay:Mr we're going for cake tastings and I'm going to be giving you the theme,for the suits and all.

She laughed and my heart ached.

Tay:Whatever,I'm gonna drag you myself

She was smiling and so free,I presumed she was talking to Zack.

Tay:I love you ok?

Tears welled in my eyes.I love him.I've known him longer than she has.I walked back to my room.She doesn't love him.She is nothing but a whore with a useless gift that doesn't work for her.

I wiped my tears and splashed cold water on my face.

I went back and knocked on her door.

Tay:ke etla

She opened the door and smiled

Tay:Samantha,wait here.

She went back inside and she came out with her phone.

Me:can we talk?

Tay:sure at the garden maybe.

I nodded.

We went to the garden and we sat on the bench.I hate her.

I noticed the necklace on her neck.

Me:that's pretty did Zack give you that?

I swore I saw her throwing daggers at me.

She smiled.

Tay:As much as you're my cousin and all but are we here to talk about my fiancé and his Prophet Zulu to you sweetie.

I mentally rolled my eyes.

Me:sure,I heard you have a gift

Tay:mhm

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

[03/12, 09:34] Lynne: WDC

.

53

Continued

.

TAY

I have a feeling Samantha is up to something and I don't like it.

Me:Why are you asking?

Sam:I don't know,maybe the Prophet is with you for that gift.I mean you're useless to a powerful man like him.He can choose anyone he wants.

She was looking at her nails.

Me:Is that all you wanted to talk about Sammy?

Sam:Can you even use your gift?You yourself are broken.No wait,not broken.Used and useless you can't heal even if you wished to.

Me:Is that all Samantha?

Sam:actually no.I'm done being nice to you.You're nothing.

Me:Samantha your evil thoughts will consume you.Be careful and try not to sell your soul to the

devil okay? Don't let hate darken your heart and ruin whatever good you still have. Never fan the flames of hate.

I stood up and walked away. What was that? How the hell did I manage to say all that? I'm just a healer who hasn't tapped into her gift as of yet. I walked back to my room. Useless people and their pettiness. I sat by my chair and continued to plan my wedding.

.

AVA

I passed by Taylor's room and she looked busy. The light inside of her was getting brighter. She is really trying to heal her heart. She will be great. My only sunshine, she's much stronger than she thinks she is. If only she knew how great of a gift she possesses. It's rare. She's a rare soul and one of God's chosen. And I believe the heavens approved of her marriage. Together they will be great. I smiled and walked slowly closed her door. It was slightly ajar.

.

A WEEK LATER

.

TAY

I was so nervous. I was covered and Samantha well she was still here and avoiding me like the plague. I did her no wrong. I just decided not to tolerate her. Family or not. And speaking of family seems like everyone accepted that I'm Sanele's daughter. It's not like I'm rooting for a relationship from him really. I don't know him. But he's my father so if he wants a relationship with me I'll give him a chance I guess. Zack gave me a chance and now I love him. We'll see.

Mom: my baby, you're so grown

Me: ma, I'm almost 24 and I'll always be your baby.

Mom: they're here. I hope everything goes well.

Me: It will.

I was still in my room and my phone rang.

Me: Mrs Zulu hello?

My mom raised an eyebrow and I picked my pillow hitting her with it.

Zack:Mr Zulu speaking.

Me:Hi

Zack:MaZulu how are you?

And when he said MaZulu.Yoh!

Me:good.

Zack:i don't like one word answers

Me:we prayed over this,everything is going to be fine and by the end of the day well I'll be your wife.

Mom was smiling and I glared at her

Zack:Hmm,my little healer.

Me:Yes Prophet.Your people are here.I've got to go.Bye love.

Before he can respond I hung up and mom looked at me.

Me:we can go now.

I followed her and she led me to a room where I was

with my cousins. We made sure we were covered
and the Zulus will choose their bride.

.

We were all on the floor with our heads bowed.

Sean: From these beautiful ladies you can choose
the bride you came here for.

Sanele: you do know your bride?

Man: we do. Can we choose from the beautiful ladies?

Sean: of course

In my heart I was praying nothing goes wrong. God
we prayed over this.

Man2: Child lift your head

Somebody tapped my shoulder and I did.

Man: That's the bride we came for

Sean smiled.

Man2: Umuhle.

Man: She is.

I didn't do any makeup. I just applied some lipgloss

and wore the attire.

Sanele:are you sure?

Man:very sure.She is the one.

We were all dismissed and I went to my room.I hope they are not difficult but the hardest part is over right?

I removed my doek and sat on the bed looking at my ring.

Mom walked in.

Me:how is it going?

Mom:your uncle and father and uncles are being difficult

Me:oh God!the Zulus?

Mom:we'll see how it goes.I'll update you.

I nodded and mom walked out.I just held my amulet.I never take it off.

Me:I hope it all goes well.I hope it does God.

I logged on to my social media accounts to take my

mind off the negotiations.

It was same old same old.Nothing interesting.

I called Milla

Me:Cammy.

Cam:Hi,how's it going there?

Me:good how are things that side?

Cam:things are good,when are you coming back?

Me:I don't know,once the negotiations are over.

Cam:how's the wedding planning going?

I started to tell her and she helped me with a few things.

When I hung up mom was in my room.

Me:And?I hope its good news?how long has it been?

Mom:three hours.

Me:are they done?

Mom:almost.Your uncle is difficult

Me:yoh!

Mom:don't stress,you're going to get married
wena.As you were.

She left.I don't know what to do and I can't call Zack.

I sat on the bed.I didn't know lobola discussions
could be this nerve wrecking.I had no idea I would
be this agitated.

.

Mom walked in after what seemed like hours.

Mom:Its official.

Me:whats official?

Mom:you're grumpy,you're traditionally Mrs Zulu.

Me:what?oh my God!It happened.It finally happened.

Mom smiled.

Mom:and my baby will be leaving me,you're really
married.Traditionally but you're really all grown up
and going to be somebody's wife.

Me:Mom don't cry.

Mom:I love you Tshepi

Me:love you too mom.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

[03/12, 09:35] Lynne: WDC

.

54

.

TAY

I was packing my bags.Apparently my in-laws are coming to pick me up.Most of the family members left yesterday since the negotiations were over and done with.They were a success too.

I sat on my bed next to my suitcase.

Me:we're really going to do this marriage thing huh?

I smiled as I twirled the ring around my finger.

There was a door opened.

Me:Tasha?

Tash:I'm going with you,we have to plan the traditional wedding woman so the Queen is going to help me.

Me:Tasha have they told you that you're bossy?

Tash:not really.J ust came to notify you of this detail.I won't exactly be using the same transportation as their Zulu bride.But I'll see you there

I nodded as she walked out.I have a wedding to plan on top of that.

My phone rang

Me:hello

There was silence at the en of the line.

I checked the caller i.d and it was an unknown number.

Me:Hello?hello..

Still silence but the call was ongoing.Thats strange.I immediately hung up.Maybe its a wrong

number right?maybe.

I just grabbed all my luggage and made my way downstairs where I found the family waiting.

Me:Ma I'll be back

Mom just held on tight to me.I'm her only daughter and I'm getting married

The uncles from the Zulu family I presumed smiled at me.

Uncle1:he chose well

The other nodded.At least everyone forgot about the Jerome incident that happened almost a year back.Its really part of a pst I don't want to uncover.He's the reason i get nightmares till this day and I'm in therapy at the moment.

Well turns out the family has their private jet and we flew to Zulu kingdom.I hope they accept me.

The flight itself was two hours at the jet's normal speed.To occupy myself I just got busy and planned the wedding.

We arrived and well there was a car waiting.

I got in and I admired the surrounding. This place is well taken care of.

The car came to an abrupt stop and I guessed that we were here.

The servants helped with the luggage while one of the uncles went to the door and just opened.

I followed him inside and a squealing Kelets o could be seen.

Kele: My sister in law

Me: Kelets o hey

she engulfed me in a hug and I couldn't even protest

"Kelets o, she hasn't even been here five minutes"

It was the Queen. My mother in law if I might add.

Me: your majesty

Ma: you're already my daughter, no need for formalities

Me: oh

Ma:I like you.I liked you from when I first saw you,no wonder why

She shook her head as she led me to the kitchen

Kelets o followed suit

Ma:well I've never had the opportunity to get to know you better

Me:Well...

That sparked an easy going conversation.We talked about nothing personal and also she gave me input of a few things of the wedding.

This wedding planning thing is stressful thats for sure.

The Queen is friendly and welcoming but so was the King.No wonder they are Zack's parents.

Speaking of Zack I haven't talked to him all day.But its late and I shouldn't be disturbing him.He might be praying and I shouldn't disturb him.

I sat crosslegged on the floor with my guitar in hand and my phone on the floor.I need to get the lyrics of this song right

I can't afford a mess up at my own wedding. Besides no one knows I'll even be singing at my wedding except Camilla and I hope she keeps it to herself.

Tasha? She arrived an hour later after my arrival and well she got busy. About the bridesmaids dresses I will choose and ask Kele if they would be fine with what I've chosen. Sure it's my wedding but they need to look good.

I started by practicing my vocals with an easy song.

Me: "I don't wanna hear sad songs anymore, I only want to hear love songs. I found my heart up in this place -"

My phone rang and Zack's picture flashed. My heart skipped a beat.

Me: Prophet Zulu

Zack: nkosazana, where are you?

Me: in the bedroom, why?

There was silence.

Zack: Are you home?

Me:yeah!What is it?

Zack:I'm outside the gate,actually parked three blocks back.Can you come out?

My mouth hung open.He is ambitious.I tied my robe tightly around my body as I wore my sleepers.

Me:I'm risking my life for you,you know that?

Zack:what happened to 'we're in this together'?

I smiled.I undid the door lock and the guards at the gate.

Me:There are guards at the gate,do you think they'll allow me to leave the premises?

Zack:give them the phone.

I gave one of the guards the phone and he gave back the phone after a few minutes he gave it back and whispered to his other guard friend.They opened the gate for me.I don't know what they talked about.

I saw his car driving closer to the gate.Saves me the walking distance.The door opened and I got in.

Me:I-

His lips smashed into mine as he held my face and I held onto his shoulders.He bit my lower lip while our foreheads touched.

Zack:I missed you.

Me:me too

He pulled away as he smiled

Zack:just had to see you before the wedding

Me:and you know that's against the rules.

Zack:a whole month is too long

Me:you were still going to see me,we have cake tastings though we won't be alone but it's something

He pecked my lips.

Zack:I love you MaZulu

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

[03/12, 09:36] Lynne: WDC

.

55

.

A MONTH LATER

.

TAY

Everything was coming together nicely for the wedding. Tasha was the one designing my wedding dress and the traditional dress.

Me and Zack we're good.

At the moment I was in my therapy sessions with Dr Simpson.

Dr: Taylor how do you feel about getting married?

Me: Happy. But it feels too good to be true. I haven't been this elated in a long while and it feels foreign at times. I feel like it's too calm and something is

brewing

She raised an eyebrow

Me:I get I'm being superstitious but my gut feeling or sixth sense is telling me something else

Dr:I see.So do you know what marriage entails?

Me:I know that you'll be with your partner for the rest of your life and that you should love each other.

Dr:You forgot something,something I fear you're afraid of

I sighed.

Dr:Sex.You and your life partner are going to sleep with each other at some point

I stood up from the couch and walked around the office

Me:I know that.I do.I don't know if I can do that

Dr:can't do that or afraid?because of what J erome did?

Me:Afraid.That image is still in my mind of him trying to force himself on me

Dr:But eventually you have to realise that your partner is not Jerome am I right?

I nodded

Dr:has he ever done anything to make you fear him?

I shook my head.

Dr:would he ever do anything to hurt you?

Me:I don't think so.He is patient with me and everything

I said as I ran my finger through my curls.Zack is good to me

Me:As a little girl I made a promise to myself to keep my virginity till marriage and I still am one.But angazi.Not sure if I'm emotionally and psychologically ready to have sex

Dr:and thats why I'm your therapist

I laughed

Me:and you're a good one.I'm getting there and with the medicine you prescribed

Dr:how are those pills treating you?

Me:anti-depressants help balance my emotions at times,should I stop them?

Dr:Once we see a lot of progress or there is a health risk then you'll stop but I can tell you you're doing good

Me:thanks doc

Dr:when is the wedding?

Me:in two weeks.Everything is on schedule and all

Dr:I'm happy for you

Me:and I'm glad I was forced to be your patient

She chuckled as she concluded our session

I'm going to the palace and I hope Zack doesn't do anything to ruin his chances.The last time we were nearly caught together.Alone.

Just another two weeks to go.

.

I was beat and well tomorrow the girls and I have dress fittings with Tasha.She has a team working on the dresses and all.I still have to see what she'll

wow me with this time around.

I opened the door to my bedroom and I gasped.

Me:And how did you get in here without them seeing you?

Zack:I have my ways

Me:This time your mother might catch you and smack you

Zack:I'm too old for that

Me:whatever

I hugged him and he wrapped his arms around my waist

Zack:how's my little healer doing?

Me:good.

Zack:therapy is good?

Me:yeah.Thank you.You practically forced me to go but thanks

Zack:you're very much welcome love

Me:does the church know?

Zack:This Sunday love.You're already my wife.The whole family will be there

Me:I'm nervous.They might not like me

Zack:Woman,calm down.You're mine ok.A wife.A mother.A precious gem.A healer.Trust in yourself

Me:you won't force me to sing?

Zack:no.It should come from your heart if you want to

Me:Did I ever tell you that I love you?

Zack:Nope.Say it.

Me:I love you

Zack:I love you too babe

He let go of me and hugged me from behind.

Zack:are you planning to have kids in the near future?

Me:How near?

Zack:a few months near.

Me:that near?

He nodded.

Me:Not now though.I think after a year or years.

Zack:years?

Me:are you planning on knocking me up?

Zack:depends.

Me:We'll revisit the topic.

Zack:Since you don't want to have kids in a few months I suggest you use contraception babe.

His big arm wrapped around my neck and my breath hitched.

Me:but w-we haven't even st-

Zack:I know just a warning my love.

He whispered in my ear and shivers ran down my spine.Damn this man for being sexy.

Will I be able to do this?We'll see but I guess he will be with me every step of the way.

I moved from him.

Me:you should go,wouldn't want anybody seeing

you

He pulled me to him and his lips were on mine in seconds. I slowly wrapped my arms around his neck as he deepened the kiss. His hands were on my waist and the kiss was not like the others we used to share.

Zack: See you on Sunday and then on the wedding day

Me: mhmm

He pecked my lips and walked out. I don't know how he'll get out of the house without being seen.

.

SAM

I don't know what to do at this point. Taylor won. She got the guy. The guy is smitten about her and I'm out here miserable over the guy. I hate her. She is not good enough for him. Everything will work itself out right? Everything that is good has to come to an end. Nothing lasts forever. It might not be me to ruin the perfect family but somebody will. Eventually.

.

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 09:37] Lynne: WDC

.

56

.

TAY

I was getting ready for church. So this is it, we're going public about our relationship.

I applied lipgloss and tied my hair into a high bun. No makeup, just clear skin me.

I wore a white shirt and I tucked it into a yellow maxi skirt,paired with sandals.

I took my Bible and handbag.I breathed in.We're finally doing this.

He actually prayed with me this morning.I needed that.

I walked out and I saw my mother in law.

Ma:won't you trip in that long dress?

I shook my head.I'll be fine.

We left.Mom will meet us there at church.She said she'll be in the crowd.

After what seemed like hours we arrived.

The ushers escorted us inside and particularly directed me to where Zack usually sits.

I saw Cammy and Will.

Me:Hi

Milla:Hi,are you going to bless us with your voice?

Me:I don't know

Well I joined in on the singing. They do praise very well. And wow this is such a large crowd. I mean large because I had once been part of the congregation. Well I am but not in the crowd. He touches people's lives and he touched mine. I smiled as they sang Kim Walker's Spirit Break Out.

Me: "spirit breakout, break our walls down. Spirit break out. King Jesus you're the name we're lifting high, revival. We want to see your spirit here."

Gosh! It was beautiful. I wiped the tears that fell. God is in this place. He really is and I ran away from such a presence?

I could feel the fire to worship like there is no tomorrow. Is this what I've been denying myself all these months? The spirit to move through me and use me?

Tears fell from my eyes as I went on my knees.

Me: God, God!! I've been a bad servant. I've been so focused on my pain and forgot you.

.

As everyone was deep in worship,Zachariah could feel the change in the atmosphere.She was one of a kind.She didn't even know how she herself induced that deep atmosphere

zack smiled to himself as he took his Bible and prepared to walk inside.

.

TAY

Everything quitened down,I stood up as I saw Zack.No wonder everything quitened down.I smiled as I wiped my tears.

Zack:Good morning bretheren

They all responded equally happy.

This is nice.He asked us to take our seats and well we sat down.

He smiled as he glanced over at my direction.

Zack:Before we start with today's sermon I have an announcement to make

Oh gosh!I quickly took the wipes from my bag and

wiped my face clean.I think I looked fine.

Zack:well,I'd like to inform you that I've found the bone of my bones.My other missing rib.

The church clapped loudly.

He quietened them down.

Zack:can I take this opportunity to introduce my lovely wife?

Obviously they were excited.They all wanted to meet the Prophet's wife.The mother of the church.

Milla whispered in my ear

Milla:get ready

He squeezed my hand

Milla:He's going to call you that side

Zack:sunshine would you please come forward?

Sunshine?I just walked to the alter as the congregation clapped their hands and some ululated

He held my waist and whispered in my ear.

Zack:you're great love

And I think everyone saw that as they clapped loudly and all. Yoh!

Zack: well this is Mrs Zulu bretheren.

They clapped their hands as Zack smiled.

He let his hand drop and I walked back to my seat.

Zack: Thank you. Now for the business of the day. Lets open our Bibles to John 1 verse 5. Love can you read the verse for me? Use New Living Translation if you will

I opened the verse. Speaking in such a large crowd. One of the ushers handed me a mic

Me: The light shines in the darkness and the darkness has not overcome it

Zack: It is really simple to comprehend. The light shines in a dark place. Have you ever seen light shining where there is light? It has never happened. That's the reason why we switch on our lights when night falls. Love read Matthew 5 verse 14 still in that same version

Me: You are the light of the world-like a city on a

hilltop that cannot be hidden.

Zack:exactly!people you are the LIGHT!The Word simplifies it like that.How can we know how bright your light is if we don't throw you in the darkness?If you aren't in the dark?If you are not tested.That situation you are going through its just to show the world how bright you are.Child of God,you are the light.Sunshine read another version on J ohn 1 verse 5

Me:The light shines in darkness and the darkness does not understand it

Zack:It does not understand light.Those who are trying to bring you down don't understand the light inside of you,You are the source of light in this dark world.J esus said you are the light of this world.Why let the darkness overcome that light when you have God besides you?why let the darkness consume the little light left inside of you when you're supposed to be fighting to shine brighter.Child of God wake up.We are called to light the way.If the darkness comes,lean on Him.Do not lean on your understanding.Are you hearing me somebody?

I felt like that was low key targeted at me. And he was speaking sense into my head.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 09:38] Lynne: WDC

.

57

.

A week later

TAY

Tomorrow is the last day for everything. The traditional wedding was the morning event. I'm honestly nervous about everything. Today is my bridal shower and on Saturday we're tying the knot.

I was at the venue for the wedding.

Me: Move the flowers that side, yes. Let everyone be able to view them

Kesha who is the wedding planner came up to me

Kesha: Taylor the cake is ready, so on Saturday morning I have to collect it

Me: Thank you, honestly

Kesha: you hired me to plan your wedding Taylor

Me: and it's good. Everything is coming into place. We just need that florist with all the flowers.

Kesha: she said tomorrow. Tomorrow the flowers are coming. We've set up almost everything. The catering company will be here too. We know the time this wedding is supposed to start Taylor. Breathe in and out. Nothing will go wrong

I squeezed her hand as my phone rang and I answered.

Me: Camila?

Mila: Ok, calm down Tshepi, everything will go well

Me:Palesa I hope so.Things in my life have been messed up and I just want this one day to be perfect for me,just this one day that marks the start of my new life with my husband

Mila:I hear you.Where are you?

Me:On my way to check on Tasha

Mila:but our dresses are fine

Me:the matron of honour and the bride's dresses are fine but I just want to double check everything guys.See you later.

Before she could respond I hung up and I caught a cab to meet Tasha in her temporary studio in Jozi.I can't believe she has been here for over a month to make sure my attires are okay.She's an angel

I made my through the bustling people.I was in a hoodie and jeans.I looked horrible to say the least.

I got to there and she was just sketching

Tasha:Everything is good Princessà

Me:I want to check though,I know I'm being paranoid but the dresses still there,the traditional

one,the wedding dress and the one I get to wear at the reception?

She nodded as she put her pencil down

Tasha:its sorted,you didn't gain weight did you?

Me:No.I even exercise.I mean imagine me?A whole Tshepang in the gym?

Tasha:the belly fat gone?

Me:it was tough,my legs hurt for days from the leg raises,the plank worked its magic and some of the exercise I tried out.I can say I'm in shape.Lost a few kilograms but in shape for that wedding dress

Tasha laughed.

Tasha:now go,Go relax at home

Me:alright

I walked out as I walked to Zack's office.Tomorrow I won't have the time to see him and I'll see him at the traditional wedding on Saturday.

It took me twenty minutes to get there.I asked the receptionist and she said he was still in a meeting.

I just went up and decided to wait for him in his office. After the wedding, I will look for a job too. Everything has been so busy I just haven't looked for one. I don't want to be dependant on Zack and I don't want to be a housewife too. We'll talk about it anyways.

I walked inside and he wasn't there. I just sat on the couch and went through the guestlist. There are so many relatives on both parts.

I mean from Zack's part there are almost 40 people coming. Family and extended. My part wow, we have from my grandparent's part and then my father's part. Its just family. So we're catering for a 150 people which is the highest but we might expect less than that. Its reasonable and there will be no media coverage. Just that small number for the wedding.

I scribbled down some notes to remind Kesha about who's to sit where.

I felt hands on my shoulders.

Zack: you look tense

Me:when did you come back?

Zack:a few minutes ago,stop stressing
love.Everything will be just fine

Me:If you say so

Zack:I know so now give me a kiss

Me:no!I'm sweaty and gross.All this running up and
down

Zack:who cares now come

He held up his hands and I stood up and walked to
him

His lips interlocked with mine and he bit my lower
lip

Zack:I love you sunshine

Me:Love you too my prophet

He smiled against my lips and he broke the kiss

Zack:and you decided to visit?

Me:of course,sit down

He went to his chair and I sat on the chair opposite

his

Me: Tell me the suits you and your groomsmen have picked match the theme and colour I gave you?

Zack: it does.

Me: traditional attire?

Zack: it's okay

Me: double check and call me later on the day. The suits and everything. Even the reception attire?

Zack: I will double check, Tshepi yoh!

Me: thank you and see you at the wedding on Saturday love

I pecked his lips and walked out of his office. I called Cammy

Me: Sweetie I'm heading home. I'm tired and I want to sleep

Cammy: okay

She hung up and I just sighed. This is so stressful.

I just headed to the palace I guess using public

transport. Zack offered his car so I can drive but I want to work for my first baby. Also I've spent his money enough on the wedding things though he gave me an unlimited budget but I gave myself a budget. Besides I'm not catering for a huge crowd and Kesha is also affordable.

It took a few hours till I got to the palace and when I arrived I was so tired. Will I be able to attend my own bridal shower?

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 09:39] Lynne: WDC

.

58

.

TAYLOR

I walked inside the house. I was exhausted to be honest. I just headed to my bedroom since the house seemed empty. When I got there I saw Camila seated on my bed.

Me: Milla who let you in?

Milla: I let myself in besides we have a bridal shower to get to.

Me: I'm exhausted to be honest. Done for.

Milla: I can remedy that situation, that's why you have me as a friend so sis relax.

Me: I'm tired though.

Milla: come, follow me.

She just dragged me to God knows where in this house.

We arrived at a certain room and she opened the door.

Milla: we brought the spa to you, courtesy of Mr Zulu.

I smiled.

Me:senior or junior?

Milla:your father in law now come,enjoy the mass age,I'll be back after an hour love.You need to loosen those sore muscles and ease the tension.

She left me and I just went to the bathroom to get undressed.I need to calm down,everything will be perfect on my special day.

They got on with the mass age and it was heavenly.I swear the woman has heavenly hands because wow!I felt all the tension leave my body.It was relaxed and languid.

Her:your body shouldn't be stiff dear child.I hear you're getting married

Me:yes.

Her:relax and let us ease your tension.yes?

Who could say no when her hands worked my shoulder blades and my back.The mass age was just wow!

When they were done I just wore the gown she

handed me. Seems Milla thought of everything to be honest.

Me: thank you, I even feel brand new

Her: it's my job child.

I nodded as she packed her stuff and walked out.

As soon as she walked out, Milla walked in

Milla: how was it?

Me: it was honestly rejuvenating. I'll be sure to thank my father in law later for this.

Milla: no men are allowed inside the house so your gratitude will have to wait. We have to pamper the bride to be.

Me: I'm in for a lot aren't I?

Milla: you have no idea sweetie

I was in my robe and she led me downstairs to the dining room.

They had pushed the table back and had laid down a plush carpet. Pillows were surrounding a huge pillow in the middle and there was a sash. Balloons

decorated the dining room and it was so pretty.

Me:it's all for me?

Milla:who else is getting married but you?we need to spoil you,otherwise we won't be able to spoil you cause obviously your husband will spoil you better than we can sweetheart.

Me:don't make me cry,this is beautiful.

Milla:and no we did not waste money though you deserve it.

Me:who said anything about money?

Milla:akere you're always about the saving money vibe so we did not spend a lot.I did the decor with help from your sister in law now go get dressed.This is not a pyjama party.Its a bridal shower,wear your best dress though we're not going anywhere

Me;sure Mrs jossy pants.

She snickered as I made my way to my bedroom and I decided on a knee length dress.It was black and looked nice.Iy should do plus I've never worn it

anyway to be exact

I tied my curly hair into a messy bun and I applied Vaseline.

My phone beeped and it was a text from Zack. He was making sure I wasn't stressing. I'm more relaxed now.

I made my way downstairs and to the dining room.

Me: I'm here guys.

They were all seated and my mom's was there. Gosh!!

Moment: surprise

I chuckled as she put the sash on me that read "bride to be"

My mother in law placed a crown on my head.

Ma: there, a princess

I sat down on the middle cushion and well we weren't that many. Just my mom, mother in law, Kelets o, Milla, Ella, grandma and a few other cousins who were above 18. Not that we were drinkit

or anything but hey

Well the older women most especially my mother in law advised me on everything marriage. We has the talk and I was listening. Even Milla said a word or two since she is married.

Overall when the talks ended it was time for a partau as Kelets o put it.

Me: it won't exhaust me?

Kele: dear sister you worry too much, I'm turning the music on, make sure you can dance with that dress.

Me: challenge?

Kele: you can dance?

Me: a princess the never reveals her abilities.

She smiled.

Since apparently the whole house is to all ours for the night.

Kele just blasted a song through the speaker.

Milla smiled. Iys been a while since I danced but I might have to put these shoes away.

Kele:Mrs Zulu let's go.

Thank God my hair was in a bun

Me: ready?

Kele:sure

The well the other cousins joined in and Milla was taking a video.

Me:"labantwana ba wrongo,labantwana ama Uber,labantwana madumani.ha ba e thatha e ba e faka makhaleni ba e thatha.E ba e faka makhaleni ba e user"

I was doing the amapiano dance move.Lom was spurring me on while my mother in law cheered on Kele.Gosh it was so nice.It was fun.

THE WEDDING DAY

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 09:39] Lynne: WDC

.

59

.

Most of the cars dispersed as the traditional wedding came to an end. Everyone invited was getting ready for the white wedding.

Taylor walked into her room as she left her groom being escorted to the black mustang. She smiled as she looked at her engagement ring. Soon another ring was going to be on that very same finger.

Tasha: Taylor, we don't have time. We're waiting for your groom to leave then we're heading to the venue. Your bridesmaids are on their way there.

Tay: Of course. This is really happening isn't it?

Tasha:yes.Your mom will meet us there,your wedding planner is already there and by the looks of it the aisle and where the reception will be held is already spectacular.

Taylor breathed in as she watched from the window.Zack's car already left and she felt all jittery again.

Tasha:lets go.

She wore her slippers as she followed Tasha to the car that was waiting for them.

Tasha:you are going to take a bath,then the makeup artist and hairstylist will do their jobs.Your mom will help you into your gown and no communication with the groom Taylor.I'm serious.

Tay raised her hands as she got inside the car and it drove away to the venue.

Her dream wedding is about to take place in a few hours.She is blessed to have him in her life thats for sure.

.

1 hour later

Zack was with the grooms men as they got ready.

Will:my man,you're finally tying the knot.How does it feel?

Zack:It feels right in every sense,she is right.

Vusi:Two of the guys are out of the dating game

Zack:watch it.I was never in the dating game to begin with

Will:whatever the Prophet says guys

The guys laughed as they fist bumped.

Will:And now you have a wife,how was the dry season so far?

Zack just hit his shoulder

Will:whaaat?its been dry(coughing)

Zack:shut up

Will:But how long has it been again?

Vusi:more than two years.Yep.Definitely more than that

Zack:I made a mistake by having you guys as friends

Tim:you did not.We are looking after you my man,prophet or not.You do know whats gonna happen after this right?

Tim fist bumped with Will as Zack sighed irritated by their playful banter and to believe that they are anointed ministers of God.God!!

Will:I know.He will be getting some.

Vusi:my thoughts exactly.Can we give you advice?

Zack:I'm not going to talk about my wife with you guys

Tim:we know she's taken Mr,calm down.After the honeymoon we want a little prophet bafo!

Will:I got four annoying brats

Vusi:Wait till his wife hears him.He'll be in the dogbox.Same goes for Prophet over there,looking all serious when he knows he just wants to score

They laughed and Zack smiled.His suit was per the theme given by Taylor.

Will:how long do we have to wait here till the ceremony starts?

Zack:I think another hour

Tim:might as well start dishing up some advice to the big guy

Will:to pass time,our points were not heard last night.Lets do it again

Vusi:I second that

Zack:you guys are annoying

Will:We're here just for that Mr

Vuyo:Yes.I need to say something this time

Vusi:please,the floor is yours

.

Taylor looked at her reflection in the mirror.Her mother walked behind her as she held her shoulders

Ava:don't cry baby.That man loves you.Did you see how he looked at you earlier today.You are the most precious thing to grace his life

Tay:I'm the lucky one

Ava:You looked beautiful with your traditional attire but now..you are just spectacular sweetie

Tay:Thanks mom.

Ava:Everything is almost set.The guests have arrived.The groom ad his men haven't walked out and your granddad will be waiting for you when you walk out.I'm so proud.

Tay:Thank you mom.I love you

Ava:I love you more mother.Thank you for raising me to be the woman I am today.Thank you.You did a marvelous job.Tanki!

They hugged as Taylor kept the tears at bay.She shouldn't be ruining her makeup.

Her mother broke the hug as she took one final look at her daughter and kissed her forehead before she walked out.

Taylor sat down on the couch as she looked at her dress.It was everything and more.Tasha knows what she's doing.The best dressmaker in Avalore to

be exact.

Her curly hair was straightened and a crown was placed on her head. She is royalty and it was of a necessity that she wears the crown.

She didn't even recognise herself in the mirror. She looked surreal and so so beautiful. How will Zack react when he sees her walking down the aisle?

Her vows are in her head and she felt jittery again. The man was finally going to be her husband.

Tay: God, I thank you for today. Let this day proceed according to Your will father Lord. Be with your servant and thank you for blessing my life with your Prophet. Thank you.

She almost shed a tear but she stopped. She can't ruin the makeup.

The wedding song came on and she walked out of the room.

Her granddad was by the doorstep.

Grandpa: Hermosa, you look beautiful. Princess à

Me: thank you grandpa.

Grandpa:Let me walk you to that Prince of yours.

I smiled as we joined our hands.I'm glad
dranddaddy is strong enough to attend my wedding.

.

The wedding vows and everything is coming.Lost
the other half of this chapter

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

[03/12, 09:40] Lynne: WDC

.

60

.

Taylor held onto her grandpa's arm as they walked to the garden. Her dream wedding was in a farm far away from the city and there was no media. It was a gorgeous farm which was where most flowers were grown. The garden wedding plus the orchestra playing the wedding song. The traditional wedding song. The ring bearer walked forward with the rings.

When she was at the aisle the orchestra saw her and started to play the song again. The guests turned their heads as they were taken by the bride and how she looked. The venue itself was gorgeous but the bride was just wow!

Taylor smiled as she saw the man waiting for her at the altar.

Grandpa: this is it princess á.

Her grandfather walked her towards her prince who was taken by his bride's beauty.

.

Zack shed a tear as he watched his wife walk down the aisle to him.

His father held his shoulder and squeezed it.

Bandile: this is it son, the woman you've been waiting for.

He nodded as Taylor's small hands were placed on his big ones. Her grandfather whispered in his ear as he nodded and he walked to his seat.

He looked at his bride who was equally nervous and excited.

The Bishop led the guests and everyone present in a prayer of thanks to the Almighty for giving them the strength to be present for this union.

Bishop: dearly beloved, we are gathered here to celebrate the union not two individuals. If there is anyone who has something to say, speak now or forever hold your peace.

There was silence for a good minute and Taylor breathed a sigh of relief when no one objected. Zack watched her and he just could not believe she was his. Today and forever.

Bishop: As we were. Today marks a special day for

two individuals who want to embark on a journey of life as one. The Word says man needs a helper, he needs his other rib to be whole and today God gave Prophet Zulu one. It is said that a woman shall leave her father's house to move in with her husband and the two shall become one. Well the two today do not want to do the traditional vows as each has their own custom vows.

The crowd chuckled as the Bishop gave Zack the go ahead.

Zack took the ring he had customely made for his wife. He knew her measurements and preferences and asked that to be made for her. Specially for her.

He took both her hands in his as he looked at her behind the veil.

Zack: The day finally came Sunshine.

Taylor smiled at his endearment for her.

Zack: when we met which was over a year ago I didn't know that I would be standing her on this day pledging my love for you.

The people cooed and awed. The couple was just too cute.

Zack: what can I say love? I love you and you of all people know that. I stand before you today not as a Prophet or a Prince but as a man. As a man who is looking at the most beautiful woman he has ever laid his eyes on. As a man who just wants to see a smile on that beautiful face. Always. Taylor I love you and I won't get tired of reminding you each and everyday that I do. That I'm willing to do everything in my power to make you happy. I don't understand why I am blessed with such a woman like you. You're strong, stubborn, difficult and everything in between but I wouldn't trade you for anything. I really don't care what people say about you because in my eyes you are perfect. You're not broken or tainted. You're perfect babe. I...

He shed a tear as he wiped it and Taylor held his cheek. She loved this man dearly.

Zack: I have a lot to say but MaZulu just know that I will never leave you alone in your darkest moments. Even if you kick me out of the house I will

still come back for you. You complete me. God knows I would do everything for you. He knows and I know that I would kill just to have you by my side each and everyday. You are the girl of my dreams. Literally and I would do this over again if it means having you.

The crowd smiled as some wiped their tears.

Zack: with this ring I commit myself tonight, heart, body and soul. I give you all of me and I promise to cherish our love and protect what we have for as long as God keeps me on this earth. I promise to hold your hand through any obstacle, through sickness and health, through riches and poverty, during trials and tribulations. I even promise to hold your hand even when you're giving birth to our first born child.

This time the crowd laughed and Camila shared a look with Will who winked at her. These two are just so beautiful.

Taylor held in the tears that stung her eyes so bad. How was she going to top this?

Zack: This ring my love is a sign of my commitment to you okay angel? In love you so much and I as Zachariah Katlego Zulu take you as my lawfully wedded wife. I promise to love and appreciate you each and everyday. To make you feel special and love you everyday

He took her hand as he slipped in the second ring on her finger. His wife.

Taylor's tears trickled down her cheeks as she couldn't hold back the tears anymore.

Zack took his handkerchief and just wiped her tears away without removing her veil.

Taylor thanked God it was waterproof makeup otherwise would've been a mess. Zack pulled her to him as he whispered in her ear.

Zack: I love you so much it hurts. You're my biggest weakness.

The crowd looked at the couple as they shared that intimate moment. What Zack was telling Taylor was meant for her only. Just her and not the whole world. He moved back as he looked at her. She was

gorgeous. Taylor cleared her throat as she looked at the rare specimen standing in front of her.

Taylor: how am I supposed to top that?

The people laughed and Samantha realised she had been wrong. Her cousin was good and she was trying to get in the way of something that God has blessed. Regardless of what she had said to Taylor she still invited her to her wedding. They look happy together.

Taylor: well I don't know how I'm still gonna beat that but I love you too babe. And I do remember when we first met.

She chuckled as Zack held her hands in his.

Taylor: I'm not the easiest person to be with but damn. You take my moods and all my tantrums as you take them in a stride. You make loving me look so easy. Words can't describe how I'm feeling at the moment Zack. I'm not willing to lose what I had and I promise come rain or sunshine I will still be there for you.

She held his gaze as she breathed in.

Taylor: You once told me that you'd rather fight with me than look for someone else and I'm the blessed one. O always ask God if it's real. If you're real and it turns out you are baby.

The guests laughed.

Taylor: I stand before you not as a healer or a princess but as your wife. Your helper and life partner. I promise to stand by you always. I fully commit myself to you on this very special day which will be forever be engraved in my heart. I submit myself to you as my husband and the father of our future children. I love you Zack. I take this ring as a start of new life. Our life together as man and wife, no one can ever love me like you do Mr Zulu and I want us to be together as long as God keeps us on this earth. I love you my love. My king.

She slipped the ring on his finger. Their rings were identical but she engraved his.

They held hands as the Bishop took a moment to look at the couple.

Bishop: wow! What God has joined together no man

can ever break it. I pronounce you as man and wife. Mr and Mrs Zulu. Prince and Princess Zulu. The Prophet and his helper. You may kiss the bride.

Zack pulled her to him as she flushed against his rock solid physique. She looked down as Zack slowly lifted her veil.

She took his breath away.

Zack: Even on our wedding day you're still shy love.

He was putting her on the spot again as she felt her face get hot. The crowd laughed as they closely watched the encounter. Everything seemed perfect.

Zack lifted her chin up with his thumb as he looked at her hazel brown eyes. Perfect.

Zack: I love you.

He said as he brought his lips to hers. Taylor held on to his shoulders. Even when wearing heels he was taller than her.

She smiled while they kissed as he broke the kiss as people stood up and cheered the newlywed couple.

Zack whispered in her ear.

Zack: You look ravishing sunshine.

She smiled as she hid her face on his chest and he chuckled. She was cute. His very own wife.

They locked hands as the Bishop allowed them to walk down the aisle as husband and wife.

Taylor: I love you Zack.

Zack smiled when he heard her small voice.

Zack: Love you too sunshine.

They walked towards the decorated palace which was where their reception is going to start.

He startled her by picking her up as she squealed.

The photographer hired was allowed to take picture anywhere so they didn't need to have a picture hour.

Their wedding was a sunset one and she held onto him as he walked over to their chairs and placed her on her seat.

Taylor: we still have to change.

Zack:after maybe an hour love.

He sat down next to her as he held her hands and the guests sat on their specific seats. Her dream wedding happened and the party is just about to begin. He has another surprise coming his way that's for sure.

.

.

Reception things loading

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTIONED

UNEDITED VERSION

[03/12, 09:41] Lynne: WDC

.

61

.

Taylor held onto his hand as Will sat by Zack's side and Camila sat by her side.

Milla:that was beautiful, congratulations friend.

Taylor:thank you.Now let's get this party started.

Milla:I remember what we practiced love.They have no idea what we're gonna do.

Taylor:ditto.But I have to spend an hour in this dress.

Milla:the night is still young mamfundisi.

Taylor smacked her shoulder as Milla winced.That hurt.

.

Will fist bumped with Zack as the two smiled.

Will:Soo..

Zack:so what?

Will:gonna smash it tonight?

Zack hit the back of Will's head.

Will:what?You and I both know the truth Mr.

Zack:shut up William

Will:just trying to help you here

Zack:I wonder why I'm still friends with you.

Will:I give good advice and mine for tonight?Go easy on her,don't let your sex starved self hurt your new wife.

Zack:I hear you Sokhulo.

Will:I'm serious though,Zack and you'll be just fine.

Will smiled as they shipped on their non alcoholic champagnes.

The MC walked to the stage and guess who volunteered for that.Zack's sister.The one and only Keletso.

Keletso:welcome everyone.And that was a wonderful feeling but we are here to path and celebrate our couple.Congrats guys.

Her bubbly personality was what most people loved about her.

Kelets o:well before we do anything and before our couple leaves,the chair is here Mrs ,you.And all the bachelors get ready,tomorrow might be your lucky day to get married.

People chuckled as Taylor looked at Zack who smiled at her.Her heart melted right there.

Milla:goooooo...

She stood up as she sat on the chair which was placed on the dancefloor.Everyone was looking at her.

Zack looked hot as he had ditched the jacket and walked over to her.

Zack:Babe.

Taylor:love.

Zack:Can I?

She nodded as her breath hitched.

He went on his knees as he looked up at her.Her

heart thumped in her chest.

Zack lifted her dress and he got hard. He needs to control himself.

Taylor felt his teeth grazed her thigh as his other hand held her other thigh. It was so intimate as she bit her lower lip looking down at him as his head was under her dress. Today he wasn't a Prophet but just a man who got married to the woman he loves.

She felt some kind of way as he slowly lifted his head with the gutter between his teeth. Such a simple thing and he looked hot.

She looked at him as he stood up and pecked her lips.

Her face flushed and she looked at him.

The bachelors gathered around as he threw the gutter. One lucky man caught it as he laughed.

Zack helped her out of the chair as he offered his hand. She took it as he held her waist.

They walked to their seats as people clapped their hands. This couple was everything and more.

Kelets o canned herself as she stood by the podium.

Kelets o:well...that was hot!

Zack chuckled as he looked at his wife who's face was pink from blushing.He just ran his hand across her hand as he's saw her reaction to him.

Kelets o:our bride can throw her bouquet,all bachelorettes can line up as she throws her flowers to you all.Maybe I might get lucky.

The Queen watched Kele who then raised her hands.

Kelets o:I'm kidding mom,still young.

People laughed and well Taylor's mom smiled.Her daughter is all grown up now.Her father was here with his family which is also Taylor's family and today everyone was happy for her little girl.

Taylor:on a count of three,1....2....3.Catch!!

The women jumped as some fell on the dance floor to catch the flowers.

Taylor chuckled as she looked at them.

Kelets o:well,that's only a quarter of whatever that is

going to happen tonight.Lets excuse our couple for an hour or so.In the meantime mingle.eat and there are drinks available.

People all around as Zack took his wife's hand as they went to their changing rooms.

Zack;same room or different rooms?

Taylor:different rooms,you can come to my room after 30 minutes.I'm sure I'll be done.

Zack nodded as he held his jacket in hand and walked to the room the guys used.It was all her idea to change outfits and everything to make Taylor happy he would do it.

Taylor struggled with getting out of the dress.She regretted telling Zack to go to the other room.

She took her phone from the stand as she dialled his number.

Zack:love

Taylor:I need your help.

Zack:give me ten minutes,I'll be there.

She nodded as she sat on the bed waiting for him. Ten minutes later he knocked and she opened the door as he walked inside.

Taylor: Help me out of this dress.

Zack: ok.

She swept her hair to the side as he slowly unzipped the gown.

She felt his hands on her back and she closed her eyes. Okay. Should she kick him out? noo..

Taylor: Thank you

She turned and faced him.

Taylor: can you turn around for me. Pretty please?

She batted her eyelashes at him and he had no choice but to turn around. She stepped out of the gown as she grabbed the dress for the night.

It was just an ankle length dress that still allowed her to dance.

When she was done, he zipped it up. She looked at him as he was wearing black dress pants with a

white dress shirt. Classic but still stylish.

He pulled her to his frame.

Zack: You look beautiful.

Taylor: thank you Mr Zulu, you don't look bad yourself love.

He slowly brought his lips onto hers as she lost most of her resolve.

He picked her up as she wrapped her legs around his waist.

He sat on the couch without breaking the kiss with her still wrapped around him.

Zack: God I want you but I'll have to wait love.

He rubbed her chin as she looked at him.

They sat like that as she just held onto his chest.

Zack: let's go. We don't want to keep the people waiting.

She got off him as he proceeded to stand up and held her waist as they walked to the door.

They walked together to the huge garden where their wedding reception was held. Kesha did a great job.

When they arrived the people clapped their hands for the couple as they sat down.

The waiters for the night brought their food.

Taylor took her fork as she does Zack some of her chicken.

He fed her his food as they laughed with each other.

The people just watched in awe as the two shared smiles and whispers between each other. It was a match made in heaven.

Kelets o: can I have your attention please?

Everyone moved their gaze to the MC

Kelets o: it is my pleasure to welcome these phenomenal artists to sing the couple's song. The song chosen by the couple.

People clapped as the artists walked onto stage.

"K'dala ndilindile, to say how much I love you. I for

this message for you ndithi 'I do Ng'yavuma....I' "

The couple walked to the dancefloor as they opened the dancefloor with their first dance.

Taylor:our first dance as husband and wife.

Zack:our first dance sunshine

They danced to the song.When the song ended everyone clapped loudly as they cheered the couple on.

Camila winked at Taylor.The dancing firstborn the song first.

Cammy whisked her away from Zack's arms.

Milla:the dance or you're singing first?

Taylor:cover for me.

Milla:got it.

Taylor walked away and Milla had to make excuses for her friend because she wanted to sing for her husband.Their love was one for the story books.

.

Taylor held her guitar as she smiled looking at the rings on her finger.

Here goes nothing. The orchestra knew their stance. She saw Zack talking with Will.

Taylor: on a count of three.

The lights brightened around the orchestra as people's attention moved there

Taylor: "We could leave the Christmas up till January. This is our place we make the rules. And there is a dazzling haze and a mysterious way about you dear. Have I known you 20 seconds or 20 years Can I go where you go. Can we always be this close? forever and ever and I take me out and take me home. You're my my my lover"

Zack smiled at his wife. A little birdie might have or have not told him she'll be singing that song.

He grabbed the mic from Keletso.

As Taylor was about to continue she heard his baritone deep voice on the mic as it echoed, he told her he doesn't know how to sing.

Zack:"We could light a bunch of candles and dance around the kitchen babe.Pictures of when we were young would hang off the walls.And we'll sit on the stoep I'll sing lovesongs to you when we're eighty.See I finally got you now honey,I won't let you fall."

Taylor looked at him in awe as love shone in her eyes.They sang the song together as some people took videos of the special moments.

Taylor:I love you lover

Zack smiled at his wife.

He held her in her arms.

Zack:enjoyed the wedding babe?

Taylor:yes.There is more darling,you hijacked my song

He laughed.She is whining about him singing along with her.

Milla called out to Taylor.

Taylor:sit down and watch babe.

Taylor went to Camila as all the bridesmaids where waiting for her.

Kelets o:about time.I want to dance Makoti vhele.Dj the song please Mother in law song Mr.

They headed to the stage as Zack sat down with his grooms men to watch.

Zack:got the cash?

Will:I got you man.I got you.

They fist bumped.

"

Koko koko mmatswale.Ga re boele morago re Sena Makoti

Re re Koko koko mmatswale.Ga re boele morago re Sena Makoti.

Koko koko mmatswale.Ga re boele morago re Sena Makoti."

The guys watched as the ladies danced as Zack smiled.

He stood up with his entourage as they joined the

ladies on the dancefloor.

He danced with his bride whom by the way was a great dancer.

Mid song the guys surrounded Taylor as Zack just danced around her throwing money all over her. Cash notes rained on her as her husband threw the money as if it's nothing.

She smiled as she went down with him on the dancefloor. Heels or not. This was their damn wedding and they had every right to do as they pleased.

Taylor: "Ga re boele morago re Sena Makoti."

damn this wedding was fun and this was just the beginning of their life together.

He held her waist as they danced to the song together and their people joined on the dancefloor.

Zack: I love you babe.

Taylor: love you too.

Zack: wanna dodge the party?

Taylor:noo...we will have to dance Mr.You still haven't seen my dope moves.Wait till the DJ put hiphop bin the mix.

Zack:I can hold my own you know.

Taylor:I saw darling.You really are hot

Zack:Is that a compliment?

Taylor:it is babe.Now let's dance.

Zack:as you wish Mrs Zulu.

She held his hands as they were on the dancefloor and the DJ switched the song to J ohn Cena.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

UNEDITED VERSION

[03/12, 09:42] Lynne: WDC

.

62

.

Hey,Beautiful beautiful beautiful beautiful
angel.Love your imperfections every
angle.Tomorrow comes and goes before you
know.So I just decided to let you know,the way that
Gucci look on you amazing-Bazzi

.

Zack fed his wife the first piece of the cake as she
also brought the fork to his lips.

The PDA of the new couple was infectious as
people felt really honoured to witness their special
intimate moments.

Taylor bubbled with laughter as some of the cream
ended on her cheek and her husband just took it
upon himself to kiss that very same cheek.

Zack:Sweet

Tay:you're being cheesy babe

Zack:for you sweetheart

After that everyone had freewill to eat the cake as a slow song came on.

Zack:Can I have the pleasure o dancing with my wife yet again?

Tay:of course

She gave him her hand as they danced slowly to Anthony Hamilton's Her Heart

She placed her head on his chest as the DJ switched to Perfect

Zack:you're perfect

Tay:and you're an adonis

He chuckled as they continued their slow dance

When the song ended he just picked her up and she smiled.

Zack:lets get you home babe

Tay:Home.I like that

Kele:well everybody the night is still young but our

couple will be leaving us. It was wonderful to celebrate your wedding with you guys. It was such a beautiful wedding. Everybody agrees. Thank you and God bless.

The people cheered as Zack carried his wife out of the place. His mother and mother-in-law said they will sort everything out and will have her stuff delivered over at his house and some of his stuff at this place

He walked with her to the changing rooms and he placed her on the couch.

Zack: babe get whatever you're going to need for the night. Don't forget your phone

Taylor nodded as her husband walked out and she took her phone. Her mother said she packed her overnight bag and it might be sent over to Zack's place in the morning or something along those lines

Zack walked back in the room with his suit jacket and he was on the phone.

He just put the suit jacket on her shoulders as he pecked her lips whilst still talking to the phone.

How did she get lucky and marry this guy?He was everything she has been looking for in her whole life.

When he hung up he looked at her

Zack:The driver is rounding the car up,ready to leave?

She nodded as she looked up at him

Zack:what?

Tay:nothing.I love you Mr Zulu

Zack:I love you too sunshine

Tay:Thank you for the wedding

Zack:anything for you,it wouldn't be a wedding though without the bride

Tay:and your money

He chuckled as he answered his phone.He looked at his wife

Zack:Lets go

He held her hand as he led her out to where the driver said he was parked.He opened the car door

for her as she got inside and he followed suit.

He held her hand and she just placed her head on his shoulder. Today was a fairytale.

.

They arrived and Zack carried his wife.

Tay: I can walk though

Zack: I know plus I wanted to carry you over the threshold

Tay: That's sweet

He carried her to his bedroom. She had been the first woman to spend the night in his bedroom. He actually bought this house when he started ministry so it's still new.

He opened the door and laid her on the bed as she looked at him.

Their new life together is just starting. She knew it wasn't going to be a bed of roses all the way. She promised to be there through it all. She will be strong. For that man.

Zack:you aren't changing?

Taylor's face flushed.He's going to see her naked.

He unbuttoned his shirt as he saw how uncomfortable his little wife was getting.She was innocent.

Zack:should I use the other room?

She quickly nodded as he finished unbuttoning his shirt and he placed it on the bed as he walked out.

She got undressed and wore his shirt.It smelt like him.She went to the bathroom and removed all traces of makeup from her face.

She walked out and found him in the lounge.

Tay:I'm done

He nodded as he pulled her to him.

Zack doubted that he was going to be able to control himself if he saw he naked.He very much doubted his self control.Its been almost three years and now..his wife was a stunner.

She looked gorgeous in his shirt even.

Tay:so our new life is just starting

Zack:it is,now that we're married for life

Tay:yes.You're stuck with me for life Mr Prophet.Better get used to it

Zack:I already am sunshine

Taylor just placed her head on his bare chest.He was still in his pants though.

Tay:where are we heading for our honeymoon?

Zack:Its a surprise Mrs Zulu,wait till tomorrow

Tay:Well I want to know.So I can pack and all

Zack:your mother and friend has that sorted out

Tay:which friend?

She prayed it wasn't Camila.That woman was so sneaky

Zack:Camila

Tay:Oh God!

Zack:anything wrong?

Tay:Camila?yoh!I'm mentally preparing myself for

what she is about to put in my bags

Zack:what is she going to put in your bags?

Her face flushed

Tay:Uhm..Well look at the time,we should get some sleep

Zack:You're doging my question though

Tay:Nothing out of the regular

Lies.Camila is packing everything out of the ordinary

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

UNEDITED

[03/12, 09:47] Lynne: WDC

.

63

.

Zack watched as his new wife fell asleep. She looked peaceful and she was tired. He slipped out of bed as he went to his study for his daily prayer sessions. He had every reason to be thankful. She was one of those reasons.

.

Taylor woke up in the morning and she felt his strong arms around her. She turned and she looked at him. They really are married

Zack: morning Mrs Zulu

Her face flushed. He doesn't miss the chance to make her blush

Tay: morning

She replied as he ran his knuckles across her cheek
She didn't want to wake up from this dream. It was

good and she was happy.To think there was a point where she gave up on the idea of them.

Tay:Thank you

Zack:for what?

Tay:bringing me back to my senses.I almost ruined a good thing

Zack:I didn't let you,now get up we have to get ready

Tay:where are we going?

Zack:you'll see,now get up

Tay:but my stuff...

Zack:arrived an hour ago

Tay:you were awake?

Zack:You were sleeping peacefully.I didn't want to wake you up love

She smiled as she got out of bed.

Zack:I'll bring your overnight bag,your mother said you needed it now

He pecked her lips and left the room.Well she's

hoping the bag has what she needed for now. A few minutes later Zack walked in with the bag and she opened it. She took everything she might need for a shower and she walked inside the bathroom.

She breathed in and out. She is going on a honeymoon with her husband. They are going to get intimate. She needs to get used to the idea. He is not her brother nor is he a prophet when he's with her. He is a man and a husband. One that has needs that are to be met by his one and only wife which is her.

She still remembers what the ladies told her during her bridal shower.

Tay: ok, you will be able to do this. He is your husband baby girl. Your man. And he loves you.

She proceeded with her shower and once her hair felt the moisture it curled up again. It looked so nice straight though.

When she was done she wore her underwear before she wrapped herself in a towel. She might as well try and get used to the idea of Zack seeing her. Its

totally new territory for her.

She found him in the room and she didn't even throw him out. Her heart wasn't stable.

She sat by the bed as she applied her lotion.

Zack watched her from the corner of his eyes as she slowly removed the towel. Wow! All of that was his wife? His. Wow!

She picked a plain white dress and he didn't take his eyes off of her. She was gorgeous.

Taylor felt his gaze burning into her. A few more minutes and she will be done.

She breathed in as she turned to look at him.

Tay: babe aren't you going to get ready?

Zack: hm..sure

He headed to the bathroom and Taylor gave herself a pat on the back for overcoming that. It wasn't so bad.

Zack had one hell of a cold shower and when he walked out his wife was not in the room. He

chuckled as he saw the clothes she had laid out on the bed. She picked out his outfit.

He wore the white jeans and black t-shirt she had picked.

He rolled up the sleeves of the shirt as he paired the look with his black Timberland shoes.

He walked down the stairs and found her busy in the kitchen

Zack: what are you making?

Tay: breakfast, give me thirty minutes and I'll be done. I promise

She was busy and he let her be.

.

This was it. They were finally leaving the country. Zack said two whole full weeks.

Two weeks of fun and spending time with him. She still has no idea what Cammy packed in her bag. She prayed it wasn't what she feared it was. She would literally freeze.

Zack grabbed his wife's hand as he led her to the private jet that was waiting for them.

Tay:pretty sure now's the time to tell me where we're going

Zack:patience my dear.Patience

Tay:how long are we going to take to get there then?

Zack:probably a few hours

Tay:you're being vague and thats not fair mr

Zack:be patient love okay?

Tay:I will then.

They got inside and Taylow was blown away.The inside looked gorgeous.

Tay:it has a bedroom doesn't it?

Zack nodded as he led her to the bedroom.

The jet was preparing to take off and he closed the bedroom door.

Tay:Its magnificent.Who did the interior?its beuatiful and speaking of interior can I have your

permission to revamp our house?

Our house. It felt right on her tongue

Zack: whatever you want to do, go right ahead

She clapped her hands. She has plans already for the house. Move a few things. Give the place a feminine touch and make it feel homely for the both of them. She did major in interior design and Architecture so it was going to be a piece of cake

Tay: Thank you

She said as she willingly sat on his lap. She held his cheeks as she brought her lips onto his. He used his hands to wrap her legs around his waist before his hands settled on her lower back.

He broke the kiss as his lips travelled to her neck.

Zack: I don't know how long I'm going to control myself around you

He sucked gently on her neck as Taylor threw her head back. This was new and it was nice. He was doing things to her body and they haven't even reached their destination yet.

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

UNEDITED

[03/12, 09:48] Lynne: WDC

.

64

.

Zack's hands skimmd her body as his lips met her lips once more.He had to stop now before he lost control.He won't be taking his wife's virginity on a plane,she deserves something better than that.His hands settled on her legs and he broke the kiss.He watched her go beet red then look down.

Zack:still shy?

Tay:Shut up!

He laughed as he stood up with her legs still wrapped around him and he sat on the couch.

Zack:I love you MaZulu

Tay:love you too Zack.Aren't I heavy?

He snickered

Zack:not at all,you comfortable?

Tay:yep

Taylor just laid her head on his chest.This was something she would like to get used to

Tay:tell me about your childhood

Zack:I swear my mom has already told you and you want to confirm if its the truth

Tay shrugged

Tay:are you going to tell me or not?

Zack:it was actually good.We were royalty but at home we were always united.Me and John always ganged up on Kelets o every chance we get.She

would team up with our cousins as little as she was

Tay:that sounds like her,that girl can speak

Zack:thats still my sister

Tay:and mine,continue

Zack:it was honestllyuch a close knot family.Even when I went off the rails at varsity

Tay:tell me about that

Zack:I wasn't always a Prophet you know.I was a playboy

Tay:that explains your good looks

Zack:I'm offended.I've always had good genes so you know Mrs Zulu

Tay:your baby pictures say a different thing

Zack:she showed you those?Oh God!

Tay:but you were cute though.Such a cutie

She pinched his cheek as Zack removed her hand

Zack:Focus Taylor

Tay:I'm still listening,you were a playboy.What

changed?

Zack: Things happened. Hectic things

Tay: how did you know?

Zack: I started to see, then I asked my father who confirmed and I was in denial. I was a 24 year old now. Working but still a rake

Tay: I see

Zack: and now I'm 28 and married to the love of my life

Tay: that's cheesy but I love you too baby

Zack: I know. I know.

She just listened to his heart beat as his hands traced her arm.

Eventually Taylor fell asleep and he just removed her legs from his waist as he cuddled her. She was perfect. He really was going to make good use of their time together at this honeymoon because after this things are going to get really hectic.

He checked his time. They are almost there. Just an

hour to go.

He moved her hair back as he studied her face. She was beautiful.

He just placed her on the bed and asked the air hostess to prepare something for them to eat. It's been a long flight and she slept through most of it.

He placed the food on the table and he took out his iPad as he checked for updates. Making sure that the place he rented out and hoped his wife likes it enough so that he can buy it for her if she wishes.

.

Taylor stirred and opened her eyes. She was asleep the whole journey? how long was it anyway? Her stomach grumbled as she sat up straight. Zack was busy on his iPad and she saw food on the table.

Zack: you're awake? there is food on the table

Tay: thank you

She got up from bed as she headed straight for the food.

Tay: how long was I out?

Zack:six hours at most

Tay:oh!

She sat down next to him as he put the gadget away.

Tay:still not gonna tell me where we are?

Zack:we're almost there so you'll find out for yourself

Tay:you're being difficult

Zack:and eat darling

She took a bite out of the chicken and it was nice.She focused on her food instead as Zack got back to whatever he was doing on his gadget.

Zack:when you're done we can go head out.

She was done eating and they went to their seats.The bedroom was nice though.

They buckled up as the jet was about to land.

Tay:tell me.I'll pretend to be surprised when we get out.

Zack:Patience

Tay:You might as well tell me

Zack:no can do.

The jet landed at the airport and Zack unbuckled his wife's seat belt.

Zack:you can go look.

The jet door opened as Taylor walked out of the jet.

Zack will meet her outside.

She observed the surrounding and she saw the sign.

Tay:oh my God!!This is wonderful!!

Zack walked out and she screamed as she jumped on him,planting kisses on his face.

Tay:thank you thank you thank you.Oh my word!!Loovveeee!!

Zack:you like?

Tay:Like?I love!!thank you.Why didn't you tell me so that I can learn the language?This is a dream come true.There is so much history to learn and the art

pieces. This place is where an architect would want to be and it also has some of the romantic places and all. Thank you. I love you.

Zack: glad you like it. Love you too.

Taylor slid off him as she jumped up and down.

Tay: this is so exciting. Tell me we'll be site visiting? Thank you.

Zack laughed at seeing his wife's excitement.

Zack: lets go.

They had a driver waiting for them. The driver got out of the car as he went to pick up the luggage.

Tay: I love you Zachariah! This is wonderful. And we get to be here for two whole weeks?

She squealed.

Zack: yes!

Tay: I love you. God I love you. I love you

Zack: I know love.

She rested her head on his shoulder. This was

perfect.He was perfect.For her.

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

UNEDITED

[03/12, 09:48] Lynne: WDC

.

65

.

You really really love me,you know me and you love me.And it's the kind of thing I always hoped I'd find,always thought I was hard to love till you made it seem so easy-Camila Cabello

.

The driver navigated through the traffic in Rome, Italy as Taylor sighed contently.

Tay: Rome is wow! thank you babe

Zack: welcome love

This was a dream come true for Taylor. She had always wanted to go to Rome but sometimes money isn't enough to travel to certain places. She might be a princess but she didn't want to ask for money to travel. She wanted to build herself an independent life.

The car swerved to the right as Taylor observed the busy city. It was summer time and maybe they might go for a swim and explore.

The gates opened as the car drove into the Villa.

Tay: oh my word!! we're staying here?

Zack: yes!

Tay: it's gorgeous. breathtaking even. Love! You're spoiling me now it's enough. Zack nuzzled her neck as he started to plant kisses on her neck.

Zack: I'm not. you deserve everything and more

sweetheart.

The car came to a halt and Zack got out fiestas he went to open the door for his wife. She deserved everything and more and she was going to get more.

Zack:after you malady

Tay:thank you kind gentleman

He took her hand as she stepped out of the car and he pulled her to him.

Tay:this is breathtaking. A whole villa? for our honeymoon? I bet the interior is awesome

Zack chuckled. The architect and interior designer in his wife took over as she slipped from his arms and walked straight to the house. She ran her hand across the wall as she could feel that a quality paint was used. She really liked the landscaping too. Gave the place more of a homey feel. This was awesome. She designed houses for people and she would like to design hers one day. I mean with a Prophet slash civil engineer husband the house would look amazing.

Tay:wow!!I'm completely blown away.

She walked to him as she took his hand.Lets explore.

Zack:aren't you going to rest up?

Tay:that could wait.J ust an hour then.This villa looks ama-zing.

Zack:guess I have to comply.

Taylor was awed with the villa that was to be where they were going to reside for their honeymoon.She didn't expect any less from a man who runs a construction and design company.Like he knew what he was doing when he picked this place.No wonder she fell in love with architecture,she wanted to build homes and design them for people.Hell she was a great architect if you asked her.She just didn't have time these past few months to look for a job.But she was not going to work with her husband that's for sure.

Tay:Zack!the outlay and how it was designed looks exquisite.Gosh!Zack smiled as she let go of his hand to carefully look at the art pieces in the lounge.

Tay:awesomeeee!

Her husband smiled at her raw unadulterated excitement to be here. At first he had thought it would be over the top but seems like his wife appreciates art and design. Tay: I must be boring you with my gushing!

Zack: you're not, in fact you look cute

Taylor blushed at the compliment as she ran her hand over the painting on the wall.

Tay: well we can continue the tour of the place tomorrow. I feel as if I'm in some Mills & Boon novel where a rich billionaire whisks me off to fly around the world while sweeping me off my feet.

Zack chuckled at the comparison his wife had just laid out. Zack: come on Princess you need to rest. We have a lot of activities lined up.

Tay: then I can't wait dear husband

They went up the stairs together as the rest of the luggage was being put in the lounge.

Tay: babe this is just spectacular! you didn't have to

go through all the trouble for me.really.I mean a dream wedding now this?babe!

She had tears in her eyes as she placed her hand over her mouth.This man was so good to her.She disrespected him at some point of their lives,hated him even and she wanted to give him up but he still loves her like this?

Tay:I...

The tears fell as she just felt overwhelmed with emotion.Zack didn't understand women's mood but he just held his small wife in his arms.

Zack:sshh...I'm here love.Don't cry sunshine

Tay:I can't believe you would do this?for me?I should be grateful for having you in my life,not the other way round.Its just...

Zack:it's okay love.I love you and it's okay.

He held her as she cried on his chest.When Taylor felt a little bit better she looked up at him.

Tay:thank you.For everything love.Thank you so so much.Shewrapped her arms around his neck as she

hugged him tight.

Zack just held her.

When she finally let go of him she sniffed a bit as she looked at him. How did she get blessed with such perfection?

Zack: better now?

She nodded.

Zack: mind telling me what that was about?

Tay: happiness....too much happiness.

Zack nodded as Taylor looked around their bedroom. This was beyond happiness.

Zack: let me go get our luggage

She nodded as he left the room and she wrapped her arms around herself. So much happiness, she wasn't going to think about anything negative. No negativity at this honeymoon. Just spending time with the husband. Quality time and she knew marriage isn't going to be like this forever but she'll have to toughen up at some point. The antidepressants were being taken as per her therapist's

instructions and she was finally trying to rile her emotions in the right direction. Not easy but she's trying so hard to get better.

Her husband walked in with her suitcase.

Zack: that's heavy, what did they pack in there? it's heavy and there is also another bag too.

Tay: I guess we'll have to see then.

Zack: I guess so.

He left the room to go get another bag and he kept on doing that till he dragged the last one up the stairs. All done. Now they have to pack?

Zack: should we do this tomorrow?

Tay: we should, besides we have two more weeks in Rome.

Zack: not exactly.

Tay: what do you mean "not exactly"?

Zack: it's a surprise.

Tay: okay. But I'm too lazy for a shower.

Zack:a bath,should I run you one?

Tay:it's...

Zack:I insist.

With that he headed to the bathroom and Tay heard the water running.He really was going to take care of her.

She opened her suitcase to find something to wear and she nearly screamed out in horror.

It was a bad idea to let her best friend to do the packing.What the hell is she supposed to wear now?Camila must be smiling now wherever she is and she is horrified her in Rome.Miles away from the witch who caused her anguish.She is going to strangle her yellow bone self when she arrives back at home.Is there any decent clothing even in the suitcase?

Tay:Camila is such a bad friend.Zack isn't supposed to see any of this.

Zack:what aren't I supposed to see?

Taylor turned at lightning speed as she quickly

closed the suitcase and laughed nervously.

Tay:nothing babe.Nothing.

Zack:what's in the suitcase?

Tay:just clothes.Clothes.basic clothes.

Zack:you do know you said clothes three times in one sentence right?

Tay:because it's just clothes.

Zack:and why are you getting defensive if it's just clothes?

Tay:because it's clothes Zack.

Zack:if it's clothes can you move from the suitcase?

Tay:Zack there is no need babe.Clothes.Basically things similar like what I'm wearing.

Zack:move then.

Tay:are we really going to fight over clothes?

Zack:fine!!Your water is ready.

Taylor breathed in a sigh of relief.That was clothes.She looked at the suitcase as she headed to

the bathroom.

Zack watched her head to the bathroom and he got undressed as he wrapped a towel around his hips. Why was she so defensive over clothes. Women!

He headed to the en-suite bathroom as Taylor was submerged under the water. Her hair was framing her face and he smiled as he headed to the shower. Taylor heard the water and she chanted to herself that she won't look. She won't look. When the water finally stopped she still shut her eyes closed. She felt his lips on her lips.

Zack: you can open your eyes now.

She opened them a little bit embarrassed.

Tay: you took a shower?

He looked so hot with the water dripping from his chocolatey toned body. He was drool worthy. She looked at him with the towel hanging low from his waist as she saw the pronounced v line and she flushed. Wow!

Zack couldn't help but chuckle at the sight of his wife drooling. He kept silent because once he utters a word she's going to blush and she looked cute blushing.

Zack:are you done?

Taylor snapped out of her haze as she looked at him, he was smiling.

Tay:huh?

Zack:with the bubble bath?are you done?

Tay:almost.

Zack:okay.

With that he left the bathroom as Taylor got out of the water. How does he do it? being so good looking.

She wrapped a towel around her body as she got rid of the water and rinsed the bathtub.

She walked to their room and he was on the bed with a Bible in hand.

She opted for his shirt. She didn't want to risk opening the suitcase in his presence.

She slept next to him as he held her waist.

Zack:comfortable?

She nodded as he kissed her forehead and moved his attention back to his Bible.

She grabbed her phone as she took her earphones and played Riley Clemmon's album.

This was going to be a good honeymoon excluding her shyness.

.

.

.

A few days later they had toured some of the most beautiful sites Rome had to offer.At the moment they were taking a stroll at The Garden Of Oranges.It was so romantic watching the sunset together while having an overview of Rome's breathtaking monuments.

Tay:this is perfect and the fragrance of the oranges.wow!

Zack:you're perfect babe.

She smiled as he lifted her chin up and kissed her.She wrapped her arms around him as he held her waist.They made out for God knows how long and Taylor broke the kiss.

He has been so patient with her and well maybe it's time she gave him a slice of the velvet cake.I mean it's his basically but he hasn't pressured her into sex or anything of that sort.

She smiled as she remembered that candle lit dinner they had yesterday at the rooftop restaurant of Hotel Raphael.

It was so nice.God she loved this man.

Zack:gorgeous wanna head back?

Tay:we should shouldn't we?

He nodded as they joined hands and walked back through the gardens all the way to where their chauffeur was parked.

It was 7pm and it was still hot.The heat in this country though.

The driver brought them back to their villa as he drove away from the estate.

Taylor headed to the bedroom and she opened the suitcase. She still cringed looking at all the racy lingerie inside. She dug deep till she found a bikini.

She shrugged as she headed to the bathroom. Maybe he's not gonna like that. She crossed her fingers.

She wore the black bikini and she looked at herself in the mirror. She looks fine.

She walked out of the bathroom with her fingers still crossed. It shows a lot of skin.

Zack was unbuttoning his shirt when his wife walked out of the bathroom. Daaaaammmmmnnnnnnnn!!!! That was all his? How was he going to control himself with her in that?

Zack: wow!

Tay: it's too much right?

Zack: nooooo! you look perfect. damn!

His hands itched to touch her all over.

Tay:okay.I'll be in the pool if you need me.

And she walked out of the room.He couldn't take his eyes off of her.She was drop dead gorgeous.Thats his wife.

He quickly took off his clothes as he got out his swimming trunks to go join her in the water.She won't be swimming all alone looking like that but before that he needed to light the fireplace.Even if it was hot,it was nice talking with his wife by the fire as they played silly games

Taylor relaxed in the water,it cooled her off perfectly.And the moon shone on the water.Rome is perfect.She saw Zack from a distance and she swallowed.He was one hell of a specimen.

When he got in the water she splashed the water in his face.

Tay:took you long enough.

She swam to the other side of the pool as he

followed behind her.

Zack:I'm about to catch you.

Tay:in your dreams mr

Zack:I'm a good swimmer

Taylor scoffed as she swam away from him.

Tay:catch me if you can.

With that she upped her pace and he did too.He eventually caught her as his hand circled her waist.

Zack:game over babe

Tay:not quite

With that she turned and splashed water over his face.

Zack:that's cheating woman!!

Tay:don't hate the game,hate the player

Zack:cliché

He caught her once again and his lips softly kissed her neck.

Zack:you look gorgeous in that bikini.

Her face flushed yet again.

Tay:Thank you.

He sucked on her neck as Taylor let him.

He turned her and made her wrap her legs around his waist,in the middle of the pool.

He switched his attention to her lips.Those lips of hers.

His hands held her tight and close.

.

.

.

LIKE

COMMENT

SHARE

MENTION

UNEDITED

[03/12, 09:49] Lynne: WDC

.

66

.

Say my name and everything just stops. I don't want you like a best friend, only bought this dress so you can take it off. Carve your name into my bedpost, only bought this dress so you can take it off-Taylor Swift

.

Taylor relaxed in the water, it cooled her off perfectly. And the moon shone on the water. Rome is perfect. She saw Zack from a distance and she swallowed. He was one hell of a specimen.

When he got in the water she splashed the water in his face.

Tay: took you long enough.

She swam to the other side of the pool as he followed behind her.

Zack: I'm about to catch you.

Tay:in your dreams mr

Zack:I'm a good swimmer

Taylor scoffed as she swam away from him.

Tay:catch me if you can.

With that she upped her pace and he did too.He eventually caught her as his hand circled her waist.

Zack:game over babe

Tay:not quite

With that she turned and splashed water over his face.

Zack:that's cheating woman!!!

Tay:don't hate the game,hate the player.

Zack:cliché

He caught her once again and his lips softly kissed her neck.

Zack:you look gorgeous in that bikini

Her face flushed as she looked at him.

Tay:thank you

He slowly sucked on her neck as Taylor let him. He turned her and made her wrap her legs around his waist, in the middle of the pool.

He switched his attention to her lips. Those lips of hers. His hands held her tight and close. Taylor got lost in the kiss as Zack moved through the water to the end of the pool without breaking the kiss. Zack broke the kiss as he looked at his wife.

Taylor opened her eyes and Zack was looking at her in a way that sent tiny shivers down her spine. She smiled at him as he held her and let go of her waist. All self-consciousness was long forgotten as she gave him her hand so he can help her get out of the pool.

Taylor: That was refreshing.

Zack: It was love.

She shivered slightly as he pulled her flush against his hot body which did more than warming her body. She could feel the sparks and wondered if she had been ignoring them for a long time or she didn't just want to give in to her husband. She couldn't

decided which was which though.

Zack:you're cold?

Tay:I'm fine really.

Zack:you're shivering a bit.

Tay held back as she didn't want to tell him it was her close proximity with his naked chest.

The moon illuminated his face and that was then she was aware of how utterly male her husband was.All hard planes and suddenly she wanted to run her hand all over his pectoral muscles.The wave of desire hit her hard and she asked herself yet again how she had been able to resist this male for the past days they have been sharing the same bed.

They walked inside and she was led to the crackling fire.

Zack:hot chocolate love?

No!

Zack:no?

He had raised a questioning brow and she hadn't

realized she had said that aloud. Her cheeks flushed and he just squeezed her waist.

Zack: what do you want then babe?

His voice was suggestive. A seductive whisper meant to lure her in to the desires her body were suddenly yearning for. It was an odd feeling for she knew her husband was attractive. Scratch that, he was a man with a dominating presence and right now he screamed virile male as he was inches away from her.

Taylor flustered as she looked at him. She clashed with his honeyed gaze and thought she saw fire in his eyes.

Tay: I-I..

Zack: hmm?

He wrapped both his hands around her waist and that alone was sending her hormones haywire.

Zack: darling I need words. Whatever you want.

His voice was husky as he whispered in her ear. Their eyes clashed and she was tongue tied. He

didn't even let go only tightened his grip on her.

Zack:Taylor I'm waiting.

Tay:I...

She stopped midway as she chewed on her bottom lip and she thought she saw amusement dancing in his eyes.

Zack watched his little wife closely and he too felt the sudden spark that ignited when he touched her.He had to fight against his basic primal urges to take his wife for he knew she wouldn't appreciate the caveman behavior.On top of that his poor wife was clueless.The fact that she elicited such feelings from him without knowing was proof enough.His mind couldn't help forming various scenarios of her under him but she had the final say in the matter.His fingers trailed her arm and he heard her sudden gasp.She was affected alright.

Zack:Taylor darling..

He knew his voice was as husky as they come and he could see her eyes dilating.She was his.Forever.And he planned to show her that in

every way possible.

His lips slowly kissed the side of her mouth. Close to her lips but not quite. Her pink lips parted and he had to restrain from taking things too fast. His lips left tiny kisses on her feminine jaw and he could feel the tiny tremors beneath her skin as he kissed her. His fingers were gently trailing her back and she slightly arched into him.

Zack: Babe what do you want?

Tay: I want-

She stopped midway as his lips sucked on her delicate neck and a moan escaped her lips. It was so sweet and Zack felt his blood surge to the one part of his anatomy that has been dormant for the past three to two years. He wanted her. So damn much that it hurt.

Taylor was hijacked by foreign feelings and wished that whatever Zack was doing wouldn't stop. She wrapped her hands around his neck and leaned on his shoulder as she felt his teeth scrape her skin.

She wanted him. She wanted him. Whatever he was

doing to her was wonderful. She didn't even believe she was the one who released that sound. She has never done it before.

Tay: I want you

She rapped out and his head shot up. His eyes were that of a carnal male with one objective in mind and she felt his muscles flex beneath her fingers.

Zack: I want you too babe. So very much.

His voice drew her in and she didn't know when her lips had moved to his but she was caught up in a fevered kiss that tasted utterly of the man she loved. Her tongue found solace in his as he made her wrap her legs around his waist. She did and he sat on the rug in front of the fire with her in that position. His hands slowly moved to the strings that held her bikini top together and in swift speed he had undid them.

Her full breast came into view and Zack ravished the sight of her. She was so beautiful.

Zack: Beautiful mio amore

He had picked up a bit of the Italian and her insides turned that he thought her beautiful. His love he had said in Italian. The words sealed themselves in her heart.

His hands ached to touch, to feel the lushness of them against his calloused hands. He held one and he felt woman. Warm and hot for him. His thumb and fingers worked on a puckered nipple that called for his attention and he reveled in giving his wife pleasure. Her head shot back as she moaned his name. He wanted her to feel everything he was doing to her body. He did the same to the other breast and she was already a moaning mess. She was his to please and he was up to the task. He was going to take it slow to give her the ultimate and immense pleasure.

Taylor looked at him in a daze as his deft fingers worked on her breasts. She didn't know that could give her pleasure. She felt wetness between her legs and a hum that was flowing through her veins. The fire illuminated his face and she saw the desire in his eyes. She didn't know that she could see

desire.Had it always been there and she had failed to see it?

His skillful hand lifted her off him as he laid her on the carpet.He poised on top of her as he took her lips which were still swollen from his earlier kisses.

Zack:I want to savour you tonight.I love you Taylor

His voice was raw with emotion and she welcomed his kiss as she wrapped her legs around him.She didn't miss the thrust of his loins and the bulge as he gave in to the kiss.

That only increased the unfamiliar wetness in her apex.

He broke the kiss as he trailed butterfly kisses all over her skin.His lips assaulted her breasts and her head shot up again as his warm tongue licked the nipples which had felt so erect and her breast suddenly felt heavy and he had held them.He moved from them as he continued to lay tiny kisses on her skin which left trails of blazing fires on her skin.She didn't know passion felt this good and she knew he was the only one who can put out the fire

because her body was hot for him.

His hands tugged at the strings of her bikini bottom. Her shyness emerged out of nowhere as she used her hands to stop him but he held both her hands up with his hand.

Zack: Its okay. Let me.

He slowly untied the strings and he slowly removed the bikini bottom.

Zack: beautiful.

Zack trailed his hands on her thighs. She was beautiful in every way possible. He could see the glimmering wetness on the curls that covered her apex. She was his. He was sacrificing his pleasure. Hell he was holding back so much so that she can be blissfully satisfied and it was damn hard when he only wanted to bury himself inside her moist core. He was a man with his wife.

He slightly parted her slender thighs for him and he got more hard just looking at her nether lips. She was so damn alluring. He could feel her eyes on him and he looked up only to see her blushing

furiously. Probably at the fact that he is the only man to have seen her so intimately. The very essence of her womanhood.

He used his hand as it rested on top of her apex and he felt the tiny tremors. He just wanted to pleasure her and it spurred him to do so as they were doing it in the intimate sanction of marriage. His fingers slowly moved down to the wetness and he used his thumb to rub her clit and heard her cry out. He flicked on the little nub and she was crying out his name in the throes of passion. His body was already ready for her but she wasn't quite ready for him. He inserted his finger into her core and he felt her tighten around his finger and he could only imagine how it would be to have her tighten around his length.

Taylor released a shot gasp as she felt his finger penetrate her and it slowly moved inside and she felt like she was on another realm. She didn't know the sensual creature that kept on crying for more from Zack. She didn't even know what more she wanted from him but she just wanted more. She felt

the fire that was tightening in her belly increase tenfold as she felt tremors that shook her so bad as her back arched and she screamed his name and a lot of nonsense that she didn't understand herself.

Zack:come for me babe.come for me

She didn't know what that meant she just felt like releasing something that felt so exuberantly wonderful that she thought she had died and woke up again.

She came all around his hand and she looked gorgeous doing it.Zack didn't know how long he was going to hold up without burying himself deep inside his virgin wife.But he had gained pleasure from giving her her first orgasm.

Taylor felt refreshed as she slowly recovered from that earth shattering experience and looked up to find Zack already biting her lower lip and she shook slightly as tears welled in her eyes.It felt so other wordly and she had never felt anything like it.

The fire crackled and Taylor saw a much bigger fire in her husband's eyes.Her body suddenly felt hot

again and she started to ache below and she knew she wanted him with more ferocity than she had ever imagined.

Zack:I want you so bad Taylor.

He said as he assaulted her lips more and her hands held on to his broad shoulders.

He removed himself from her and she watched him from beneath her eyelashes as he removed his shorts and his erection sprang to life.She gasped softly and he noticed as she saw the smile.The smile of a lion who looked ready to devour a lamb and she guessed in this whole situation she was the sacrificial lamb.She closed her eyes and gulped.They were really doing this and he was soo..damn!Was that going to fit?

He was on top of her in seconds and she melted like butter when his lips found a spot behind her neck and she deemed her weak spot and one of the spots he was going to use against her because she was already moaning and that did nothing to stop the fire that was already igniting within her.

Zack parted her thighs and she was so wet for him.

Tay:I...Zack..

She moaned out his name and he didn't know how hard a man is supposed to get but he did. She did something that surprised him as he felt her tiny finger wrap around him and he swore under his breath.

He watched her mouth form a small oh as her eyes widened and that went to prove how innocent his bride is which she won't be for long. If he had his way anyway.

Taylor could feel him pulsing beneath her fingers. She saw the bulging muscles on his neck and though she was inexperienced as they come she had a feeling he was holding back and it took a whole lot of restraint on his part. He felt hard but this part of his anatomy felt soft too.

Zack groaned and she looked up at him as he had shut his eyes. She continued to move her fingers on his length but he jerked away.

Zack just had to. Tonight wasn't about his pleasure

and though her tiny fingers were already giving him pleasure and he could feel the pre-come.

Taylor didn't know what to make of it but she'll learn how to give him pleasure just as he was making her feel wonderful as of now. The fire was slowly burning out but she wasn't cold anymore even though she was fully naked in front of him but the fire that was burning in her bones kept her hot enough.

He settled himself between her thighs as he was cautious not to hurt her.

Zack: Babe it might hurt for a bit okay?

He said reassuringly to her as he gave her feather light kisses on her jaw and Taylor just nodded. She wanted this and him.

Zack slowly eased himself inside of her, inch by inch as he felt her tighten all around him. That threatened his whole resolve. Taylor's breath hitched as she felt full and he was still easing into her.

He was still for a while and he wasn't even fully

inside her. He didn't want to hurt her at all though.

He thrust deeply and Taylor cried out in pain as her hands came up to wrap around his neck tightly.

Zack stilled as he waited for her to accommodate him even though it wasn't all in while he whispered sweet nothings in her ear to take her mind off the pain and he gave her slow kisses.

Zack: I love you okay?

She nodded as she held onto him for dear life.

Zack: Babe I'm going to continue and you tell me if it hurts okay? tell me to stop and I will okay?

She nodded in acquiescence and Zack slowly thrust into her again with gentleness that shocked him too.

Taylor closed her eyes as she felt the pain that was predominated by something that felt like pleasure. Zack heard no protests and assumed that it didn't hurt no more.

He held most of his weight on his upper arms and gave measured thrusts that were now accompanied by slow moans from his wife. Her eyes were closed

and he wanted her to see the pleasure from her eyes.

Zack: Taylor open your eyes for me love

His voice was husky and also commanding and she opened her eyes and she saw the love in his eyes. She felt it in his lovemaking and she slowly wrapped her legs around him like a hot glove and he went in much deeper and she screamed his name and he smiled whilst showing her in more ways than one that he loves her.

Zack buckled his knees as he thrust into her at a languid pace, sacrificing his own pleasure as he felt her on the edge. He wanted her to come first and she was certainly close as her body convulsed and she tightened around him he felt like she was milking him for all his worth. Her rapid breathing was a sign as he saw her chest move up and down and her breast tempted him again. Her pink swollen lips parted as her nails scratched his back and she cried out his name as she arched into him. Her nipples coming into contact with his chest and he let the wave of pleasure hit them both as they came

together and he rasped her name that felt like honey on his lips.

She lay on the rug exhausted and the fire from the fireplace was out. Zack rolled off from her and he pulled her to him. His ragged breathing showing how much she affected him.

She placed her head on her chest and heard his erratic heartbeat, it was beating for her. She couldn't keep her tears back and they dropped onto his chest.

He kissed her forehead.

Zack: I love you. Are you okay?

She nodded as the tears wouldn't stop coming.

Tay: I don't even know why I'm crying.

He used his thumb to wipe her tears away.

Zack: It's called post-coital blues. Some cry, some fall asleep. I guess you're the crying type then babe.

She chuckled and the tears wouldn't stop though.

Zack: Thank you for trusting me with your virtue love?

Taylor just moved her hand on his jaw feeling the five o'clock shadow and she kissed his jaw.

Tay:I love you.

He stood up and picked her up.She squealed in his arms

Tay:where are we going?

Zack:I'm taking this upstairs.

She nodded and placed her head on his shoulder.She has never felt so much pleasure in her life and it was only going to get better,he told herself as Zack climbed the stairs to their room in the large villa.

[03/12, 09:49] Lynne: WDC

.

67

.

Taylor woke up moaning as she felt him deep inside her.This man was insatiable.She didn't know how many times they made love last night and he still

has the energy to wake her up with so much pleasure.

Zack:morning

She couldn't utter a single comprehensible word as she climaxed. She came back from her daze and she looked at him and the tears were shimmering in her eyes. Damn those after sex blues. Was she going to cry everytime they made love?

Tay:morning.

He kissed her nose and she just looked at him. Her leg was draped around his but he has a lot of sexual prowess that's for sure because he wasn't even on top of her but he had still been able to make love to her in that position.

He picked her up and placed her on top of him.

Zack:how are you feeling?

Tay:loved and sore.

He tried to hide his smug face but she saw right through him.

Tay:Stop feeling so smug Mr Zulu

Zack:I'm good at everything I do.

Tay:We get it Zack.

He smiled as he took Taylor's lips in his.

Zack:Should I run you a hot warm bath?

She nodded as she got off him.

He grabbed a robe from besides their bed and she watched him put it on and head to the bathroom.She heard the water running and she replayed last night in her head.Last night had been something special.Something she was going to treasure for a pretty long time.It was what she had always wanted as a teenager.To give her virtue to the man she loved in marriage.It even surpassed her wildest dreams.The gentleness and patience he exercised with her was just too much.She loved this man so damn much.

He came back and picked her up from the bed heading to the bathroom.He gently deposited her in the bathtub and she felt herself relax and a slight sting down below.

Zack:relax and I'll make breakfast for you.

With that he left Taylor to soak in the bathtub.

Half an hour later Taylor got out of the bathtub and the ache was still there.And how she walked proved what transpired between her and her husband the night before.She decided on a white maxi dress and sandals for today.She didn't know what plans he had for them,maybe they were going to spend the day indoors but as long as she spends the night with her husband it was okay.

Her phone rang and she sighed.Who is calling now?They haven't had that much time for their phones for this week.The caller id flashed and she remembered she was angry at the person calling.

Tay:I hate you.

Milla:did you like what I packed in the suitcases?

Tay:I'm going to strangle you I swear but at least you had the decency to pack some decent clothes that can last me for a week.

Milla:why the hell do you need decent

clothes?you're on honeymoon.You should be parading naked in the house.

Tay:and God had to give me you for a friend...

Milla:I'm a good friend besides I'm older than you,take my advice and parade naked.You'll be thanking me.

Taylor shrugged as she and Camilla moved on to another topic.She said goodbye hastily as she threw her phone on the bed and went downstairs.

The aroma that enveloped the kitchen had her stomach growling and that just caught Zack's attention.

Zack:I'm almost done okay love?

She nodded as she sat on the high chair and watched him make his way around the kitchen.

Tay:have I ever told you that I love you?

Zack:actually you have,countless of times but I don't mind hearing you say it again Mrs Zulu.Say it for me darling.

Tay:I love you Prophet Zulu.

He chuckled as he served the food.

Tay:and this looks absolutely delicious.

Zack:I know.I made it for a particular woman.A delicious one.

Taylor caught on to his sexual innuendo and she chuckled.

Tay:Mr Zulu please control yourself.

Zack:I can't when I'm in the presence of such a woman.

With that he caught her lips into a kiss that had the potential of becoming a fire but Taylor broke it.

Tay:Let me eat first.

He sat next to her as they ate while engaged into a conversation about literally anything from the weather to current affairs.She even told him of her plans when they go back home.

Zack:so you don't want to work with me?

Tay:Babe as much as I want to,trust me I want to but it will look like nepotism.

Zack:but you know as well as I do that you are adequately qualified.You landed a job there on your own before on your own merits and apparently you were doing a great job at it.

Tay:I don't know if I'll be able to work there again though.After everything...

Zack:and that happened a year and a half ago
Taylor.Thats stale news.

Tay:but still...

Zack:so you would rather work for the competition because of what happened?babe its in the past.Lets leave it there ok?

Tay:so I can work wherever?

Zack:No..

Tay:afraid of a little competition dear husband?

Zack:not really.

Tay:But I don't want any special favours.I apply and I am interviewed like other candidates.

Zack:deal.

Tay:I know the HR department deals with such,no need to bother the CEO right babe?

Zack:of course.

Tay:and if..only if I get re-hired you stay away from me

He smiled.

Zack:and if I don't?

Tay:we'll solve that issue at home but stay away from me at the office.You are too much of a temptation and I don't want to tempt thee servant.

He chuckled as he kissed her lips softly.

Zack:duly noted love.

Tay:and thank you for the breakfast,I should be the one cooking for you though.

Zack:I don't mind at all.

Taylor took the plates and decided to wash them while Zack ran up the stairs to go take a shower.Italy is wonderful and Rome is just a dream.The villa itself felt like something from the

storybooks. She was only going to get better now. Focus on her relationship with God, Zack and her family. Make it up the corporate ladder and maybe in a year or so start planning a family with Zack. How would her babies with Zack look? Would they get his honey eyes and would they have her soft curly hair? Would their firstborn be a girl or a boy?

When she was done she headed upstairs and he looked impeccable in a white dress shirt that was not buttoned to the top button and those white pants. He looks good in anything.

Tay: we are going somewhere?

Zack: do you want to go anywhere in Italy?

Tay: In Italy?

Zack: The helicopter is on standby to take us anywhere for the day?

Whoa! A whole helicopter was going to take them around the country? Taylor was very much blown away.

Tay:really?

Zack:really Princess.

.

They both tumbled onto bed as they savoured each other.Lovemaking between them was explosive and very much loving.

Long moments later Taylor looked at Zack as her fingers trailed his jaw.He was gorgeous even for her.

Tay:I love you.

Zack:I love you more MaZulu.

She placed her head on his chest as she yawned.She was tired from a long day of traveling and this was just the nicest way to end their day.

TWO WEEKS LATER

[03/12, 09:50] Lynne: WDC

.

68

.

TAYLOR

I woke up early morning and he was still asleep. We came back a week ago from the honeymoon and I thoroughly enjoyed our stay there. And the memories we made, the first time he made love to me and all that mushy romantic stuff is in a safe place in the depths of my heart.

I wore his shirt and then headed to the wardrobe. I picked his outfit for the day and I walked out to go iron it for him. We are still trying to get into a familiar routine so maybe by next week I would have got a grasp of being his wife.

When I was done I went to the kitchen to make him breakfast. He can't leave the house on an empty stomach while I'm still here. He really can't.

After an hour I was done with his breakfast and the kitchen was spotless. I went to the bedroom and he was awake.

Me: morning love

Zack: morning princess.

Me:you can go have your shower,your clothes and everything is ready.

Zack:thank you.

He said giving me a kiss that was threatening to turn into more.

Zack:how did I survive without you?

Me:I don't know,you better go take that shower.You don't want to be late to work.

He let me go and headed to the en-suite bathroom while I made the bed and picked up all the clothes on the floor to throw them inside the laundry basket.Do I have to do laundry today?I did apply at his company to his approval and the interview is tomorrow.I can't believe I've been unemployed for so long.

Anywhere maybe I might do laundry today and then go check on my mom.

Hands draped around my waist.

Me:you're making me wet now.

And then my eyes widened.

Me:not that wet..urg!you get what I'm trying to say vhele.

He chuckled and kissed my neck.

Zack:I do.

Me:good.Now you need to get ready for work okay?

Zack:I feel like I'm being told what to do in a subtle manner

Me:But you have to go to work or do the work of the ministry but bottom line is that you should be getting ready for your day.

Zack:yes mam.

He let me go and I just exited the room thinking of the day ahead.So I know I have to do some grocery shopping on top of that but the laundry first then groceries and then my mom and finally the therapist.Sounds like a very boring day ahead hence the need to work.

.

Zack:you're a good cook

Me:I know love

He put the plate in the sink and I just walked him to the door.I fixed up his tie and his cufflinks.

Me:and you look very ready to take on the world

Zack:I have a very strong woman vouching for me.

I stood on my tippy toes and kissed his lips.

Me:goodbye love

Zack:I love you

Me:I love you too

Zack:if you need the car...

Me:I know where the keys are

Zack:But don't scratch it MaZulu tuu!

Me:I can't promise that,my driving skills are a bit rusty but I'll cope

Zack:then don't take the SUV or the sports car.

Me:okay.

I pecked his lips once more.

Me:bye baby

He walked out and I just headed to the kitchen to do the dishes.

.

I was at the therapist's office and this is my first appointment with her ever since I came back.

Dr Simpson:and you look good Taylor or should I say Mrs Zulu

Me:Thank you doc.I do feel good too.

Dr Simpson:How is everything?the changes to your lifestyle and everything.

Me:I'm trying to cope doc.Its a bit boring being indoors well not necessarily indoors but being at home.I always do the home chores for this past week then check on my mother and volunteer at the Children's home.

Dr Simpson:are you looking for a job?

Me:I have an interview tomorrow morning and I guess I'll get used to being someone's wife.

Dr Simpson:I see.Thats good that you're embracing the changes taking place in your life.

I nodded as she jotted something in her notepad.

Dr Simpson:The last time we talked you were scared of the intimacy of sex.

My face flushed.

Dr Simpson:and by the looks on your face I think you got over that fear very quickly.

Me:uhm..yes Dr.

She smiled.

Dr Simppps on:no anxiety attacks or looming signs of depression?

Me:Not for the past month no,the anti-depressants are working or is it me?but either way I take the PILLS dutiful along with my other prescriptions.

Dr Simpson:I'm glad.Well let me say congratulations to getting married to the man of your dreams.

Me:thank you.

We hugged and brought an end to my appointment. I walked out of the building and headed to the car. My mind was already bustling with ideas on what to make for dinner.

Being a wife is nice. It's like you're taking care of everything but it's exhausting. I'm not perfect but it's okay. He knows I won't do everything right plus since I'm the Prophet's wife I have to be involved in the church activities.

That includes maybe passing by their choir practice on Saturday. I made it through the traffic and when I arrived home I removed the shoes first before unloading the groceries.

.

I checked my watch and he will probably be home in an hour or less. The food was almost there and I even made dessert. Some chocolate mousse will do for now. I sat on the couch and I finally checked my social media accounts.

I swiftly changed my surname there before placing the phone on the couch.

.

ZACK

Well being married to Taylor is bliss. Just that I know that something might go wrong. The warning Rose gave over two months ago is still fresh in my head. But for now all we can both do is pray as we've been both been doing and just leave it in God's hands.

I navigated my way through the light traffic and made the daily commute home. When I arrived I parked the car in the garage and walked inside the house from the garage.

She was asleep on the couch and I didn't want to disturb her sleep. She must've been busy today so I walked upstairs to put the case down and I removed the shoes before heading back downstairs.

I picked her legs and placed them on my lap and she stirred before she opened her eyes.

Tay: you're back, I fell asleep but I'm awake...

Me: you look tired. Sleep.

Tay:But the food...

Me:It will have to wait.I'm not looking for a perfect housewife and you know it.Sleep.

Tay:ok

With that she closed her eyes and I placed her head on my chest.She is trying too hard and that why she's exhausted.

I pushed the hair back from her face as she breathed softly.This is the girl I've been waiting my whole life for and whatever that may happen I'm not letting her go.I softly placed a kiss on her forehead before I picked her up to go place her comfortably on the bed.I also have some work I need to finish.We'll eat when she's awake.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:50] Lynne: WDC

.

.

TAYLOR

I got the job and true to his promise to me he stayed away from me at the office. He really did and well the people aren't treating me differently so I guess that counts for something then.

Regardless of what happened they are still friendly or is it because I'm the boss's wife? Anyhow we come together in one car when he decides to come to the office and well our hasty goodbyes are done in the elevator when its just us two. After that we'll talk after work or during lunchtime which is not in the office. Life has been okay. Good even and I do try to cook as much as I can for him though we have takeouts at times and church is well so nice. I sometimes do sing with the choir during practice and its like that part of me that was open to worship is alive again and well that's good too. I don't know how the healing part will come into place but yeah its all in God's hands now.

Me:Cammy how are my godchildren?

Milla:They started talking and man they just can't shut up.I liked them better silent.

Me:that's cute.I really think Olivia looks like you.

She smiled.

Milla:Thank you,at least there is someone who doesn't look like Will.Have you ever thought of having kids?

Me:I have and the prospect of having a child is daunting but I can't wait.

Milla:Is there a bun in the oven MaProphet?

Me:Currently no.Maybe a year from now we can start trying for kids.Not now though.

Milla:kids come unexpectedly though.

Me:That's why I'm taking necessary precautions.

Milla:we'll see Taylor,we'll see.That might not be God's plan for you to have kids a year from now.

I shrugged and sipped on the milks hake in front of me.I have to meet a client in 20 at the office.

Milla:I think I should go,I have a meeting and I need to keep people out of jail.

Me:Counsel I'm lucky that I don't have to deal with the law.

Milla:at least you're making dream homes come true.

Me:that's right.

We shared a hug and I walked to the office.Lunch time was over and well Zack was in back to back meetings so we didn't have lunch together so Milla decided to hijack my lunch but I love her though.

Upon getting to the office I removed the blueprints and the house plan.Plus a graphic design of how the house will look and I waited for my client.

The door opened and he walked in.Now the meeting begins.

.

I closed my eyes.I feel so exhausted.Don't know why because I sleep well and eat well.I felt hands on my shoulders.

Me:Its already time to go home?

Zack:tired?

Me:so tired.Don't know where I get the fatigue.

Zack:You're overworking yourself.

Me:I've just been working for two weeks

Zack.Maybe its because its been a while since I've actually worked.

Zack:are you sure?

Me:positive.with the right routine I'll combat this exhaustion hmm?

Zack:if you say so.

He helped me up and I put my things in the bag.He took my hand in his and we walked out.These heels are already killing me too.As soon as we got inside the car I removed the heels.

Zack:are you sure you're fine?

Me:positive(yawning)A bit of sleep might be fine.

Zack:okay.What should I order?

Me: anything is fine by me. Thank you.

He just placed a kiss on my lips as my eyelids fluttered. I don't know where I get all of this exhaustion.

.

ZACK

She was sleeping soundly in the car with her pink lips parted. She really looks tired. Who will take care of her when I'm gone?

I picked her up and headed to the house. She sometimes reminds of a little kitten especially when she's asleep. All pink lips and long lashes.

She stirred and I just cooed her back to sleep. I have to travel no wait not travel. This is something that I do normally and I don't think I should leave her alone.

I laid her softly on the bed and I changed her into something much more comfortable. She should sleep

better now.

I walked out of the room and took out my phone.

Me:ma.

Mom:You've been scarce.

Me:I'm married ma

Mom:I love your wife though,she has a nice soul but what pleasure do I owe this call?

Me:do I need a reason to check on my mother?where is dad?

Mom:he is busy harassing in the kitchen.Wish me and your sister luck on today's meal.

I chuckled.

Me:He can't be that bad.

Mom:I'll leave it at that.

Me:ma,could you do this favour for me?

Mom:I knew that you wanted something.What is it?

Me:I'll be gone for sometime,if you can anyway can you check up on Taylor?

Mom:is there anything wrong with my daughter in

law?Katlego what did you do to my daughter?

Me:ma slow down.I did nothing.Why am I the bad guy here?

Mom:you're always the bad guy Zachariah...

Me:the full names ma...

She laughed at the other end of the line.

Mom:okay whats wrong?

Me:I don't know actually you tell me.

Mom:haibo!you don't know Katlego?

Me:I don't she is just exhausted.

Mom:maybe the changes of getting married then being back to reality.Give her time.

Me:okay but will you do that for me?

Mom:of course besides I want to spend time with her.

Me:thank you ma.I owe you one.

Mom:you owe me a grandchild.

Me:now mom,lets not get ahead of ourselves

maybe in coming years okay?I love you.

Mom:mxm and you call me sometimes.Bye Zack.

She hung up.The mothers we have.The doorbell rang and I went to go get our order for the night.

I checked on her yet again and she was fast asleep,I think she'll wake up a bit later to eat.

.

TAYLOR

I opened my eyes and I was in bed.I was wearing his shirt too.He must've changed my clothes too.

Yawning a bit I got out of bed and walked barefoot to the lounge where he was busy on his laptop.

Me:hey.

Zack:you're awake?feel better?

Me:yes,thank you.

Zack:hungry?takeout's in the fridge

Me:let me go warm it up and we can eat yes?

Zack:okay love

I walked to the kitchen and warmed up the food plus I was hungry too. I sighed as I waited for the food to get warm.

Zack: Babe?

Me: yes?

Zack: can you come here for a moment?

I walked to the lounge where he was and he just indicated to his lap.

Me: there?

Zack: don't tell me you're still shy after everything.

He said raising an eyebrow and I just made my way to sit on his lap and he looked at me.

Zack: I will be away for a while.

Me: a while? away?

Zack: About a month and a half probably if not two months.

Me: is it business?

Zack: no... I have to go to the mountains.

Me:prayer and fasting?

Zack:yes and unfortunately I won't be able to communicate while I'm there.

Me:okay.When are you leaving?

I asked as I snuggled into his chest.

Zack:Friday.

Me:its fine.Although I won't be talking to you for over a month its fine.Your relationship with God matters more and as your wife I should support you every step of the way.

Zack:what did I do to deserve you?

Me:you did a lot.A whole lot.I love you okay?

Zack:I love you too.I think the food is warm enough.

Me:and you're warm and snuggly.

Zack:you're making it sound as if I'm a teddy bear.

Me:you're far from it.All hard muscle and ish.

Zack:is that your way of saying I have a great body?

Me:great mind,body,soul and heart.

I said as I kissed his lips and wrapped my arms around his neck. His hands held my waist tight and I wrapped my legs around his torso.

Zack: up for it?

I nodded and his lips moved to my neck.

Zack: I'm so going to miss this.

Me: me too.

His hands found the buttons of the shirt I was wearing and he undid them. I just worked on his belt and I undid his zippers.

Me: a bit better.

Zack captured my lips once more and he well flipped me over and he was the one on top of me on the couch.

Zack: I love you

Me: I...

And with no warning he thrust into me and he was in way too deep. I arched my back and he continued to move inside me.

.

Me:I'm hungry now

Zack:stop pouting.

Me:I'm not.But I'm starving.

Zack:the food is probably cold by now

Me:I know.We got a little preoccupied.

Zack:you're tempting.

Me:you told me so many times before and that's why I said we stay away from each other at work.

Zack:mmh...

[03/12, 09:50] Lynne: WDC

.

70

.

TAYLOR

Me:bye!

I said hugging him by Friday afternoon.He held me

in his arms for some time.

Zack:sure you're okay?you look a bit pale and tired.

Me:maybe its hunger.

I said dismissing the topic.I'm fine.Not particularly hungry but I'm okay I guess.

Zack:Sure?I don't want to leave you like that.

Me:I'm good love.You go okay?The family is there so you go.See you in a month and take care of yourself for me.

Zack:I will.You take care.I want to find you in one piece and healthy Taylor.

Me:I'm no longer babe or love?

Zack:Taylor I'm serious.Look after your health since I won't be there to do it for you Tshepang.

Me:I promise then.

Zack:Good.If you need anything my mother,your mom and generally the whole family will be there for you okay?And don't skip church tuu.

Me:Yes Prophet.I wholly promise to do what you

asked.You worry too much.

Zack:I have to.You're precious to me Tshepang.

Me:okay.You have to go now love.

Zack:you're chasing me now?

Me:no..but take care hmm?

I said kissing his lips softly.

Zack:okay.I love you.

He held me again and smiled.A whole two months without his is going to be total torture but I will survive.He has to do the work of God.I mean he is a man of God and he has been way before I came into his life and I can't interfere.

I watched as he headed to the car and he drove off.Now I'm all alone in this house.A whole month without talking to my husband is hardly exciting and we've only been married for a month and a half?And he's gone.I fixed up my jacket and pulled my hair back in a slicked up bun.To keep the curly mess away when I'm working.

Wearing my heels I headed to the kitchen for a fruit

or something. After that I gathered my case and the car keys.

The car even smelt like him. I navigated my way through the traffic and when I arrived at work I got messages that a client cancelled their meeting. Less work for me then and that I have someone waiting in my office. That sent alarm bells and the receptionist said the guest insisted and she didn't want a scene.

I just headed to the elevator to the office. Who could it be? I mean its only morning and I have to get through house plans and a lot of things.

I opened the door to my office and nothing could have prepared me for what I had seen. My heart beat rapidly in my chest as I could feel the telltale signs of an anxiety attack and no one would be able to help me. Swallowing hard I tried to compose the swirling emotions even though I had a feeling I just went pale as a ghost.

I tugged my skirt down and the case dropping down

only made him give a sardonic smile that did nothing to assuage my feelings. I felt oddly cold and trepidation kicked to the point I thought my knees would fail me.

“Nice seeing you back Taylor”

He was in a suit which I guessed was custom designed and I prayed to God above that I don't give my emotions away so he doesn't see how much his presence rattles me.

Me: Jerome, it's been a long time. How was prison life old friend?

I said with an added hint of coldness and derision that I was able to inject in that statement alone.

His mouth twisted and he smiled. That smile just looked plain evil.

Jerome: I am a free man now Taylor.

That statement seemed to have a double meaning and just like that the bubble of security I thought I had was busted.

Me: so it seems Jerome. Now since you've learned

your lesson and all we got on with life and I suggest you do the same. Yes?

I said walking confidently to my desk before his large hand caught my wrist and I had to hold back my scream. Now is not the time to be feeling weak.

He held my hand and looked at the rings on my hand.

Jerome: married now? Hmm... and to my cousin. You bitch.

I managed to remove my hand from his grip and held on to the desk.

Me: and I wondered when the monster in you would show up. It was faster than I imagined Jerome. Life goes on. It does not solely revolve around you.

Jerome: You ruined my damn life Taylor Radebe or should I say now Taylor Zulu?

He said all of that with disgust and I had to stop myself from shaking.

Me: as you did not ruin mine? Jerome I thought prison would make you see the error of your ways

but surely not. Guess I was wrong.

Just then I saw a shadow of something dark loom in the room and as I blinked my eyes it was gone.

Jerome: had you did what all other girlfriends did we would have not been in that situation.

I sat on my chair and looked at him.

Me: no apology huh?

Jerome: you don't deserve one.

Me: very well. If you don't want to apologise you might as well leave my office. I have work to get through.

Jerome snorted as he gave me a dark glare that sent shivers down my spine. Not the good shivers but shivers never the less.

Jerome: sleep with one eye open Taylor and not even my beloved cousin will be there to protect you. No one will be there sister in law. No one.

With that he walked out and I shivered involuntarily as tears made their ways to my eyes and I had to force myself to remain rigid as a marble. He

threatened me and I can't call Zack. That's when the dam burst and I cried my eyes out in the office. I felt the bile rising and I quickly ran to the bathroom as I spilled the contents in my stomach into the toilet. I just sat there on the toilet floor. Just when I was so happy in a blissful marriage he had to come out. He just had to ruin whatever peace I had.

Standing up on weak legs I trudged back to my office. I couldn't focus on work and I felt too shaken up to even do anything. I need to go home. But what if he's watching me and he's going to come at me.

Me: God...

Tears racked me once again and I felt hopeless once again. I have to tell someone anyone. God why now?

I dialed my mother and she answered immediately.

Me: Ma..

Mom: Tshepi what's wrong? you're crying are you okay?

Me: I...I...come...mom come get me.

Mom:where are you baby?

Me:at...work..

My voice was shaky and the tears kept blurring my vision.

Mom:okay,I'm coming baby.J ust remain where you are.

I nodded frantically as she hung up and just like that I was taken back to that night when he wanted to do all those terrible things to me.

I felt my chest constrict and I couldn't breathe all of a sudden as my hand went up to my heart.No...

J ust like that everything went black.

.

ZACK

I was well on my way and I felt my heart become heavy.I do this usually but I had this unsettling feeling that something is wrong,that something bad is happening and I shouldn't have left in the first place.

Me:God forgive but I can't do this.

I wanted to walk back to the car but a flash of light appeared before me.

Me:God!!!

“Let the will of God prevail”

Me:Rose I have to go back

But did the angel listen?noooo!Instead I was stopped.

Me:I can do this another time..whats happening?

“The will of the Lord shall prevail and thy servant shall do the will of God”

Now I have to go against God's will?

And as I took a step back I was being held back.Seemed like Rose called backup huh?

Me:So now I'm not to leave the mountain until a month is up?

“yes”

I knew that if I did not do what was said the angel

would prevent me from leaving never the less and I don't think I want a repeat of what happened when I first refused my calling.

Me: fine

Ramiel let me go and I just rubbed my wrists.

“Remain blessed”

And with that both angels disappeared.

Me: God what's happening? Show me what's happening? Is this all part of a test?

I cried out in the mountain as I fell onto my knees.

.

Taylor's mother along with her mother in law were sitting at the hospital. The two had no inkling on what happened to Taylor but Lindi who was Taylor's mother in law was just as curious as to what happened to her.

Ava: she was so pale and the tears that stained her cheek.

Lindi: we'll know soon as the doctor makes his way

here.

Ava:we've been here for over three hours.

Lindi:I hope for her sake it was nothing serious.

Ava stood up as she recalled her daughter's panicked and strained voice.She wondered what happened to make Taylor scared like that.

The doctor made her way to the two women as she instructed them to follow her.

.

[03/12, 09:51] Lynne: WDC

.

71

.

The two ladies sat down

Dr:are you family?

They nodded as the doctor wrote something down on her notepad.

Dr:Well Mrs Zulu is stable for now.It seemed she

suffered from shock and in turn that raised her blood pressure levels.

Ava:Ok

Dr:We ran various tests on her.We found traces of different drugs in her bloodstream which I recommend she stops taking because for a woman in her condition they can seriously be harmful and cause a lot of damage.

Lindi:her condition?

Dr:aah yes.From the blood tests we ran we found out that she is pregnant.Four weeks pregnant.

Both women released soft gasps and the rest of the things the doctor said became blurred.Taylor was pregnant?

Dr:For now we'll keep her overnight and monitor her so as to make sure her blood pressure does not rise abruptly.That on itself can lead to a miscarriage and she is still in her first trimester.

Ava nodded as she stood up with Lindin and walked out of the office.

Ava:can we see her?

Dr.Of course,if you would follow me

That was the doctor Taylor had once told her mother was her doctor.

They followed the doctor and when they got inside the room,Taylor's eyes were wide open and she observed them and kept to herself.

Dr:How is my patient doing?

Tay:when can I go home Dr Lynn?

Dr:Taylor you know better than anyone than to force my hand

Tay:I feel ok.A moment of weakness but ok

Ava:are you ok baby?

Tay:mom I'm fine

Lindi.and why didn't you tell us sooner?

Taylor looked at her mother in law with questions in her eyes

Tay:tell what sooner?

Ava:that you're expecting.

Taylor's eyes widened to those of marbles as she took in her mother's words.Expecting?

Everyone saw her reaction and they realised that she had no idea herself.

Tay:a-as in...pregnant?

Her doctor nodded and her eyes widened more and they didn't know whether to be afraid of what she might do or to let her be.

Tay:C-can I speak to my doctor alone?

The women nodded and Taylor was left with the doctor

Tay:B-but how...

Dr:you tell me..

She was still shel shocked

Tay:I took the contraceptives as prescribed.I started taking them a week before the wedding

Dr:It seems like you forgot to tell me something

Tay:I..

Her voice faltered.

Tay:I was taking all my prescriptions on time.The anti-depressants,mood stabilizers,those bunch of pills which I forgot their names for my depression and anxiety and the contraceptives dutifully.I never missed a single day.How?

Dr:It seemed like all those pills you were taking had a field day with your hormones.Can I see the bottles of the pills you were taking?they must have suppressed the contraceptives from working one way or another.I also told you that the pill is not always a hundred percent safe.

Taylor was too dazed to even listen to Dr Lynn.There was life growing in her tummy.Her hand moved to her tummy unconsciously.She was carrying life inside of her?One that was created by her and Zack and she didn't know.

It was all too much for one day.She just wanted to escape to a dreamless sleep.

Dr:Rest up,I'll ask for your family to look for the pills

for me. We'll talk tomorrow ok? rest.

Dy Lynne pushed her hair back and Taylor succumbed to the exhaustion as her eyes closed once again.

The sad part was that her sleep wasn't dreamless. It was plagued by those nightmares she had once forgotten they existed and she woke up in cold sweat when the nurses surrounded her as the machines beeped loudly. She just wanted Zack to hold her and tell her she's okay and he'll protect her. She was missing him more and it had only been just one day. Was this what God wanted? She felt so cold and lonely and when the last of the nurses vacated her room after sedating her, she could only see a blurry shadow at the door but her eyes closed and she was in a dreamless sleep this time.

.

In the morning she opened her eyes and she saw her mother looking at her. Camilla was by her mother's side.

Milla:Hey baby how are you doing?

Taylor released a sigh and her mother rubbed her hand

Tay:tired

Ava:the doctor said you should take it easy and that she will be communicating with your therapist.

Milla:good news is that you're going home today

Taylor's mother left the room and Milla just looked at Taylor

Milla:no one knows what happened to you before you landed in hospital and apparently there was a scare at night too.

Taylor hated everyone knowing her business like this and she felt helpless.She just wanted to be in the arms of the man she love.

Tay:I'm okay.There is nothing to worry about

Milla:and you're holding back.Thats how I have every reason to worry.Look Taylor don't shut us out.Nothing good comes out of shutting us out.This is is not the woman I was talking to a few days ago

Tay:Cammy I'm fine

Milla:Tay don't make taking care of you difficult.I get it that the prophet is not around but he asked us to take care of his wife.He loves you Taylor and you know it.Honey you're not alone.Whatever thats going on in that head of yours just let us in.

.

See you guys tomorrow at 12pm.

Have a goodnight.

[03/12, 09:51] Lynne: WDC

.

72

.

Taylor looked at Milla and nodded but remained silent.She said a silent prayer to God asking for strength for whatever that may come.She has a baby to think of too.

Dr Lynn walked in and Taylor sat up straight.

Dr:how is my favourite patient doing?

The doctor flashed a huge smile at Taylor and the dreary mood that was in the room suddenly lifted and Taylor smiled a bit.

Tay:I'm ok for now

Dr:You gave us a fright at night.But its ok

She nodded

Dr:I spoke with your therapist and well we came to an agreement

Taylor didn't like it one bit when everyone was involved in her life and she had no say in it at all.She had to hide her irritation that everyone knew what was happening and the one person she wanted to know didn't know a thing at all.

Milla excused herself and Taylor thanked the heavens for that.

Dr:Well since she hasn't yet deemed you to be off your prescriptions we had to find new prescriptions for your anxiety and depression.Ones that can bring no harm to the baby looking at the fact that you're pregnant and your hormones will be all over the

place. Also since even before the pregnancy and the therapy she mentioned that your emotions could be termed as unpredictable.

Taylor nodded. Dr Simpson was spot on alright.

Dr: I have a feeling that you also don't want to tell anyone what happened. Your mother said she found you passed out in your office

Taylor said nothing as she looked at her doctor

Dr: well moving on, I have a list of vitamins to take, a new set of anxiety medicine and well we have to take you off the pill for the whole duration of your pregnancy

She nodded

Tay: how far along am I?

Dr: four weeks. Want to do a scan?

Taylor shook her head, she wanted to do it with Zack here

Dr: very well dear. So to eliminate any risk I have to put you on bedrest for a whole week and once that week is over we are going to have to check you

again.Fine with that darling?

Tay:yes doctor.Thank you Kamo.

Dr.Welcome.You know I only want the best for you.No stress.No work.Not even house chores.J ust a full bedrest.A walk around the garden is only what you should do and you should be supervised.

Taylor nodded and Dr Lynn walked out leaving her alone with her thoughts.She held her flat stomach.The eneormity of the news that she is carrying a child was still a shock to her.

.

Tay:Ma I can walk unsupervised around the garden.

Ava:I'm just following Dr's orders Tshepang.

She walked around the garden with her mother holding her hand.She missed Zack terribly.She wanted to tell him everything first and then he can tell the family.

When the ten minute walk around the garden ended her mother walked with her inside the house.Her mother had moved in with her temporarily at her

house. Just till her husband comes back, her mother had said.

When she was safely tucked in bed she heard the doorbell ring.

Tay: mama the door

Ava: okay I'm going to get it.

Her mother exited her bedroom. She held the teddy bear that Zack had gifted her on their last day at Italy. He had said she should hold onto it whenever she misses him. The tears threatened to spill from her eyes and she had to blink them back.

Her mother walked back into the room. Not a lot of people knew she was pregnant. Just her mothers and Milla. She told them to keep it that way.

Ava: Its Kelets o and Thandi.

Tay: Guess I should go to the lounge?

Ava: too much movement. We just came up the stairs. But they can't come to this room. Your doctor will kill me if she knew I allowed this. Lets go downstairs.

They made their way downstairs.

Kele:my favourite sister in law.Are you okay?

Tay:oka.J ust came down with something.It will pass.And how are you two darlings doing?

Thandi:good actually.My birthday is coming up and I came to extend the invitation to you

Tay:thats nice baby.If I'm feeling better I will come.

Thandi:well its about two months away so you'll be okay.

Kele:we just needed an excuse to see you.

Taylor:I see girls.I see.

The girls babbled a lot of things and Taylor was laughing so much.These two were such darlings.J ust sparkles of light into her life at times.

Taylor:Thandi you did not!

Thandi:I did....

She laughed and she had to clutch her stomach from laughing too hard.

Ava:Girls she should be resting.

Kele:okay ma.Bye Taylor.

Thandi:Bye sis.

The girls walked out and Taylor went up the stairs with her mother.

Ava:at least you have some colour in your cheeks.You have been awfully pale.Are you ready to talk about what happened in the office when you called me?

Taylor sighed as she looked at her mother.She knew she would want to ask about what happened.

Taylor:an anxiety attack.

She left it at that and her mother caught on that that was all Taylor was going to say on the subject and she left it at that.

.

.

.

Don't forget to like,comment and share.

.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:52] Lynne: WDC

.

73

.

Taylor was cleared of all bedrest and she was relieved. Her doctor warned her to take it easy though. No stress. She had agreed and well the baby was fine according to Dr Lynn. There has been no trace of Jerome ever since that time at the office. She doubted the family knew he was out of jail and if they knew they had brushed it off lightly.

At the moment she was humming to herself as she was sipping on a smoothie at this nice restaurant. She couldn't quite stomach anything solid as it was all violently vomited in the morning. Dr Lynn had said morning sickness and

also a change in medicine.

She saw a lady of medium height make her way inside the restaurant. She felt her heart become heavy and she swore she saw a dark shadow following the woman. She blinked and she still saw the same thing. Something was telling her to go to the woman. Why though?

As if her body had a mind of its own she found herself at the table the peculiar woman was occupying.

Taylor: hi

Her: how may I help you?

Taylor's smile faltered as she looked at the woman.

Taylor: your soul is weary

The woman looked at Taylor as if she was crazy

Taylor: can I touch your hand?

The woman reluctantly gave Taylor her hand and Taylor had a sense of déjà vu as she saw what happened to the woman. She quickly removed her hand and the woman looked at her oddly.

Tay:Your past.I can feel your pain and its heavy.

Her:Miss?

Tay:whats your name?

Her:Nthabiseng

Tay:I want to help you.You're not at peace

Nthabiseng nodded as she looked at Taylor.

Tay:your past is not pretty.Almost like mine in a way but this broke you into pieces.You lost all of the hope you had.

Nthabi:Almost like yours?

Tay:yes,can we pray together?There is this dark aura thats following you and it feeds off from your pain.

She held Nthabiseng's hands in both of hers as they closed their eyes.She prayed with the girl silently for more than ten minutes.She felt something heavy lift from her shoulders and in a way Taylor felt free from the clutches of her past.

When she opened her eyes Nthabiseng opened hers

too and looked at Taylor

Nthabiseng felt lighter as if a dark cloud gave way to sunshine. For most of her life she had wanted to die so many times but she felt lighter and looked at the woman who just did that.

Tay: Its going to take time, don't let pain consume you

She held Nthabiseng's hands as she looked at her. The dark shadow she had seen around her was gone. For good. She could feel her heart at peace. Its just the first step in many to the journey of healing but in a way she had started the healing process for Nthabiseng.

Ntibi: mam if I can ask what's your name?

Tay: you can call me Tshepang. This is one of the first steps in healing my dear. Do you believe God exists?

Nthabiseng nodded and Taylor held her hands still.

Tay: He never did forsake you. I know it felt like that but He never left. He wanted you to lean on

Him. Trust Him and the healing process. Whatever that happened was meant to make you stronger than you are.

Nthabiseng nodded with tears in her eyes as she looked at Taylor. She looked oddly familiar as her mind started to work it all out.

Nthabiseng: are you the prophet's wife?

She nodded.

Taylor: regardless of who I am, the healing process is long and healing is messy but give it time. This is just a step in the right direction.

With that Taylor let go of Nthabiseng's hands and she said her goodbyes and walked to her table. She was no longer in the mood for her smoothie. She won't let Jerome rattle her cage. She had a relapse but she will do her best to keep her faith. She was born a healer and with words and music she was born to mend the broken hearts. It was all a test of faith. She sighed as she paid and walked out of the restaurant and headed to her car.

When she arrived home her mother had cooked but

she didn't think she would be able to stomach the food.

Tay:Ma anything that I don't actually have to chew?

Ava:prridge

Tay:It will do,I'm taking the eating food thing one step at a time.

Her mother nodded and Taylor removed her shoes as she sat on the couch and scrolled down countless of photos she had taken with Zack.She missed him terribly and she wanted to tell him everything that happened.

She sighed as she put her phone away.

.

A MONTH LATER

ZACK

I walked inside the house.The prayer and fasting went better than I expected and I know I arrived here a bit late.The lights were off.I headed upstairs to our bedroom and she was asleep holding that teddy bear i bought her.God I hope nothing

happened to my wife while I was away. She looked cute and it must've been because I spent a whole month away from her.

I headed to the shower. I really needed one for being away for so long. After that I got dressed in pyjama pants and Taylor looked undisturbed in her sleep. I pushed her hair away from her face and she stirred a s bit. She looked a little different but it must be my eyes.

I slowly slipped inside the bed and pulled her to me. Placed her head softly on my chest and I closed my eyes.

.

.

.

Goodnight readers.

.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:52] Lynne: WDC

.

74

.

ZACK

I opened my eyes as I felt small hands touching me all over.

Me:I can assure you that I'm very real love

She looked at me before she placed her head back on my chest.

Tay:I missed you so much

She was crying.

Me:Ssh!Baby I'm back okay?Baby why are you crying?

Tay:a lot happened from the minute you left and I wanted you back so bad....

She was near sobbing on my chest now and I sat

upright as I placed her head on my lap.

Me:I'm sorry I couldn't be here for you love.Talk to me,what happened?

She lifted her head as she wiped her tears.

Tay:when did you come back?

Me:last night.I have my own set of keys

Tay:you could've woken me up

Me:you were asleep and looked very peaceful.I didn't want to wake you up

Tay:you lost weight

Me:fasting does that to you.Now talk to me darling.Come place your head here and talk to me.

She placed her head on my lap and I just brushed her cheek lightly with my fingers.

Me:Talk to me love.You just can't cry like that.Talk to me.

Tay:I haven't told anyone any of this.I wanted to tell you first

Me:I'm listening love

I said as tenderly as I could.She sighed and turned her head and looked at me.Her eyes wide and I saw tears again in her eyes.

Me:MaZulo don't cry.I'm here now

She sobbed and she couldn't stop crying and I was hushing her.

Me:are you feeling better my love?

She nodded.I held her in my arms and she fell asleep whilst in my arms.All of that crying must've drained her energy and she hasn't even told me what was going on,I softly placed her head on the pillow so she could sleep.

I looked for the pyjama shirt and wore it before heading downstairs to the kitchen.

Me:ma?

Ava:Zachariah hi,is Taylor awake?

Me:she's asleep.What brings you here?

Ava:I've been staying with Taylor for a while

Me:Oh!Thank you for taking care of her

She waved her hand

Ava:Its nothing I can't handle ndodana.Besides she needed all the help she could get.

I was a bit confused by her statement but decided not to quiz my mother in law on that.She had made breakfast.

Me:can I take some for Taylor?

Ava:not eggs.She hates them especially in the morning.Her appetite for food will be gone for the whole day and we can't have that besides she doesn't eat a lot of solid food.Said she doesn't want to chew.

I was really puzzled.Last time I checked Taylor ate eggs unless her taste buds changed in a month.And she doesn't eat a lot of solid food?I was lost.Totally lost.

Ma just handed me a tray of oatmeal,grape juice and yoghurt

Ava:that will do for now child

Me:thank you ma

Ava:I should get to packing and tell her that your mother is coming to see here this afternoon

Me:of course ma,thank you

She just kissed my cheek and went upstairs.

I walked upstairs with the food to the bedroom and she was still asleep.

As I once said before she looks like a kitten when she's asleep.I watched her sleep before I decided to go take a shower.When I was done she was awake again and eating the food.

Tay:thank you

Me:ma just gave me the tray

Tay:she obviously knew what to put so as to not make me queasy.Did you eat?

Me:not yet

Tay:You need to eat though,to regain your strength

I decided not to ask about those statement her mother made

Taylor ate half of the oatmeal in her plate and finished the rest of the food items on her tray.

Me:full?

She nodded as she pushed the tray away and stretched her body.

Tay:we're spending the day together right?

I nodded as I wore my sweater.She pushed the covers back and got off the bed and headed to the bathroom

I heard the water running.We still need to talk.I just don't like seeing my wife crying and not knowing why she's crying.

When I finished getting ready I took the tray to the kitchen and put the dishes in the dishwasher.

I walked back upstairs and she was already getting dresses.

She looked different somehow.I can't quite put my finger on it but she looks different.She isn't pale and exhausted like the last time I saw her.She looks a bit fuller.

Tay:I think we can talk now.

Me:are you sure?

Tay:mhm

I sat next to her on the bed and just held her.

Tay:As soon as you left I got ready to go to work...

She told me everything from when she found Jerome in her office to when she woke up in hospital. Those terrible nightmares that plagued her sleep when she was in hospital to when she actually healed another person's pain and letting go of her past.

I kissed the top of her head. This woman is stronger than she thinks, that's why I felt like something was wrong. It was because my wife was in danger and I was stopped to let the will of God happen. I won't let her be hurt again. It will break her more and she looks like she has regained her strength. I wished I was there to hold her when she needed me the most.

Me:I won't let him hurt you. I'm sorry I wasn't there

to hold you when you needed me.I'm so sorry
Princess

Tay:I know.I'm stronger than that.I needed to let go
to unlock my gift.I can actually heal.Its ok.Who can
stand in God's way love?

.

.

.

Enjoy the rest of your day dear readers.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:52] Lynne: WDC

.

75

.

ZACK

Me:You're right and I'm happy you discovered your gift.How was the feeling like?

Tay:out of this world.I'm happy I let go.

Me:My little healer.

She smiled.

Tay:not so little but in all that I've told you I left out one important detail.

Me:yes?

Tay:While I was in hospital I found out something.

Me:Ok.Are going to tell me this something you found out?

Tay:I found out that I'm pregnant.

Everything stood still and I could hear her breathing.

Me:say that again..

Tay:I am pregnant.As in having a baby in a few

months kind of pregnant.

I put the pieces together. The exhaustion and what her mother had said earlier.

Taylor: Zack? Love?

Me: I'm still here. We made a baby. Thank you love.

I said as I grinned. We got pregnant maybe at our honeymoon.

She looked up at me and she smiled when she saw my grin.

Me: I love you and our child. Thank you, that's the best news I've heard in a while.

Her eyes gleamed with tears.

Tay: I love you

Me: I love you too. Don't cry.

Tay: They are happy tears. I'm so happy right now. I love you.

I wiped her tears away with my thumb and shushed her once again.

Me:I'm back love and we'll get through whatever together.You won't be alone at night okay?

Tay:okay

I held her tightly.

Me:are you okay?With the pregnancy I mean,I know you wanted to wait for a year or two just....

Tay:surprisingly yes.God decided to bless us with a baby.J ust so you know I haven't done the sonogram scan yet.I was waiting for you to come back,we can hear the heartbeat together.

I kissed the top of her head.

Me:Okay.You can book an appointment then love.How was the morning sickness?

Tay:horrible.I would jump out of bed early in the morning and it felt like I was vomiting my whole stomach out and some of the food was just so urg!It either didn't smell right or I wanted throw up.

Me:That was horrible,do you still get morning sickness now?

Tay:sometimes.It comes and goes but the doctor

had said by my second trimester the morning sickness would have stopped and she continued to say I wouldn't like certain food so...

Me:Ma said your mother in law is coming over this afternoon.

Tay:oh!They can't stop fussing over me.Literally everyone.

Me:you're carrying precious cargo.We should take care of you.

Tay:I get that but I just don't like everyone knowing everything about me.A little privacy.

Me:okay.If that's what you want.

Tay:just in case you ask I was going to church except when I was on bedrest.And by the way I missed our Bible studies too.

Me:you're chirpy this morning.

Tay:Is it a crime that I missed you?Like everyday?

Me:I missed you too.

Tay:So...

I raised an eyebrow.

Me:so..

Tay:Well its been quite some time and I...

She looked at me and looked down.

Me:and you??

Tay:I...I missed you Zack.All of you.

Me:and I missed you too.All of you.

Taylor stood up and linked her hands together as she paced in front of me.She stopped pacing and looked at me.

Tay:I..

I wanted her to continue but I could get at what she was hinting at.

Tay:This is so embarrassing but I missed you.

Me:Yes?

Her face went pink as she looked down.Its nice to see her blush and be shy after everything.

Tay:well it's been a month and you were gone and

now you're back and I....

She looked at me, still blushing. She breathed in and out.

Tay: you can tell him. He will do it (whispering)

Me: I can still hear you

If anyone can get more pink then she just did.

Taylor sat down next to me then bit her lip and looked at me.

Me: what do you want that you can't say?

Tay: I wan...

She bit her lip.

Tay: promise you won't laugh

Me: it depends.

Tay: Promise Zack.

Me: ok. I promise.

Tay: Is this how it feels like?

Me: what?

Tay:Its frustrating you're not there to take the frustration away.I might as well say it(sighing)I'm sexually frustrated.

I laughed and she hit me with a pillow and blushed.

Tay:you promised not to laugh.

Me:if you had gotten straight to the point this time you would be sated by now and would be under the sheet unable to move.

Tay:Well...

Me:Let me go eat first and we'll deal with your minor problem after that,surely you can wait a few minutes.I mean you waited a month.

Tay:that's not something to make fun of Mr Zulu.Why did I tell you anyway?

Me:I'm the only one who can take the edge away and make you come under me.

Tay:whatever.Lets go get you something to eat then,the faster the better.

I laughed.

Me:that frustrated huh?

Tay:shut up!

She took my hand as we walked out and we found her mother with her bags ready in the lounge.

Me:can we drop you off?

Ava:its okay.You need your time together.I'll see myself out.

She hugged us and left as we thanked her.

Tay:what do you want to eat?

Me:Shouldn't I be asking you that question?

Tay:I would have you but you haven't eaten food and what use are you to me when you don't have energy and stamina?

I cocked an eyebrow

Me:Mrs Zulu really?You do know I can also not grant your wishes?

Tay:I'm sorry ok.Let me make you something to eat.It won't take long.

I laughed at her as I wrapped my arms around her waist.

Me:Its fine.

.

.

.

NIGHT

.

.

[03/12, 09:53] Lynne: WDC

.

76

.

TAYLOR

Me:I won't be long and I won't get anything done if you're holding me like that.

Zack:I don't want to let you go.

Me:You need to eat,you can go wait by the couch or something.

He kissed my neck.

Zack:Is that what you Mrs Zulu?

Me:ah..y....yes

Zack:ok.

He let me go and sat on the high stool.

I won't make eggs for him,they make me nauseous and I might throw up on his food.

I decided on bacon,sausages and toast.

It took me at least ten minutes to whip that small breakfast for him.

Me:and I'm done.Do you want juice,tea,coffee or hot chocolate?

Zack:The juice will do.

I poured juice for him and sat down balancing my head with my hands and watched him eat.

Zack:Taylor that's creepy.

Me:Don't mind me,just eat.

Zack:haibo!you're scaring me,one would think you're planning my murder.

I rolled my eyes and still continued watching him eat.The way he licked his lips after sipping the juice and the way he was cutting the sausage with such efficiency and he was in no rush shem.

Zack:Taylor on a serious note that's creepy,whats going on in that mind of yours?

I smiled.

Me:nothing,eat up.

He looked at his food.

Zack:did you poison me cause I refused to give you sex?

Me:did you refuse though?

Zack:not sure,is the food poisoned?

Me:no.Why would I kill you?

He just continued eating.

Me:you're fascinating.

Zack:how so?and the food is nice provided that it isn't poisoned.

I laughed.

Me:I mean who knew you could be soft?I mean like you were always so serious even almost 3 years ago at that time you said my singing was good and I was like the nerve of this guy.My singing is amazeballs and he said good.Imagine my surprise when I found out you were the Prophet but I was still angry.

He laughed as he sipped his juice.

Zack:you were offended?I didn't know.And soft?you want me rough?

I caught on to his sexual innuendo and blushed.

Zack:I can be rough if you want,just tell me and I'll make it happen.

Me:I was offended and I want an apology for that.And urg!Get your mind out of the gutter Zack.

I said pouting and folding my arms.

He laughed.

Zack:sweetie I'm sorry.If it makes you feel any better I knew you had a gift but it was good singing.

I gasped.

Me:still good?That apology is not valid to me then.

He stood up and just rubbed my shoulders.

Zack:and how can I get my mind out of the gutter when I'm next to you?

I blushed.

He turned the stool so I could face him.

Me:You are just going to look at me like that?After I gave you food?

Zack:look who has their mind deep into the gutter.

He kissed me and I wrapped my arms around his neck.

He picked me up and placed me on top of the island.

He stopped kissing me and laughed.I removed my hands.

Zack:why did you wear jeans if you wanted me to sex you up?

Me:Zack its not funny,I'm really frustrated here.

And he laughed more.I didn't want to smile but the smile was tugging at the corners of my lips.

Zack:I know you want smile Tshepi,just smile.

Me:Well..

Zack:Let me take care of the problem ok?

With that he removed my tee and threw it on the floor.

Me:the least you could've done was place it on the table.I do the laundry Sir.

Zack:sir?somebody is getting kinky.

Me:shut up!!

Zack:now the jeans.But why jeans babe?you could've worn that white dress of yours.

He started to unbutton it and he unzipped the jeans and tugged them off.

Zack:better and you are so gorgeous.

Me:so we're doing it here in the kitchen?

Zack:yep!

I looked at him as he removed his sweater and those sweatpants of his.

Me:oh my!we haven't done anything yet but you're...

Zack:now you shut up!

With that he got in between my legs and kissed the hell out of me and even biting my lower lip.I wrapped my legs around his waist and I felt his hands move down and they just got inside my panties and I gasped.

Zack:always so ready for me,beautiful...

His voice was husky and much more deep.

With that he walked with me and placed me against the wall and without any warning he thrust in deep.

Me:aah..yes..

He did some slow strokes before he quickened the pace and that got me breathing hard and moaning

his name and he was focused. The man was focused on giving me the best pleasure.

Zack: come for me baby..

With that I screamed and fell apart around him and he continued to move and he eventually came.

Me: uhm...w...wow

Zack: I don't think we're done, I have to make up for lost time.

.

Me: I'm tired now

Zack: sleep love. What do you want to eat for lunch?

Me: I don't know

My eyelids closed. I was exhausted.

.

ZACK

I smiled as I watched her sleep. I'll see what to make her. I wore sweatpants and headed to the kitchen to pick up our discarded clothing.

I heard my phone ring in the bedroom and it was ma.

Me:Mother

Ma:Zack there is a family meeting/ dinner tomorrow.Apparently its something important.And I won't be able to visit Taylor today vut make yourselves present at the meeting okay?

Me:alright and thanks for taking care of my wife ma

Zack:ke makoti vhele

Me:bye ma

She hung up.I had a pretty good theory on reasons for calling the meeting.

.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:53] Lynne: WDC

.

.

TAYLOR

Me:Babe its just a family meeting and we haven't seen the whole family since the wedding.

Zack:I have a bad feeling about this.

Me:me too but...

He squeezed my hand as he kissed our joined hands.

Zack:Knock.

Me:no you knock.

He chuckled.

Zack:Taylor knock on the door.

Me:You do it.

Zack:ou're so stubborn.

Tay:And you like it.

He put his thumb under my chin as he kissed me.

Zack:woman..

I broke the kiss.

Me:what did I do?

He pecked my lips before he knocked on the door.

Luckily his mother opened and she hugged the both of us.

Lindi:he lost weight feed him.

Zack:Ma,I'm being...

I elbowed him and he looked at me.

Me:I will do so ma,he just got back so it will take some time.

Lindi:I see, follow me kids.

We followed her as Zack whispered in my ear.

Zack:what was that for?

Me:Don't expose me in front of my in laws.Haibo Katlego.

Zack:MaZulu I think we need to fix your attitude

Me:It does not need fixing.

Zack:we'll sort it at home.Under the sheets.

I blushed.

Me: see, now they know what we're talking about.

Zack: we're whispering and you're the one who exposed yourself. You're blushing.

Me: Zachariah!

Zack: say it again.

Me: you're insatiable

Zack: and you love me Princess, now smile they are looking at us and you're too short.

I stopped myself from rolling my eyes but I did mentally.

Lindi: Well I think everyone is here.

John: They are late.

Kele: Really late, the food must be getting cold.

Then there was a lot of chatter at the table as we sat on the long table. Bruh! this is daunting.

Bandile: I did call this meeting but it's not my place to say.

Zack:you don't say,Taylor what should I put in your plate?

I looked at the food on the table and it was a lot.

Uncle:Makoti is glowing shem!

Kacey:She is,we should really hang out.

That one was J ohn's wife.She talks a lot and yoh!

Me:we should hey..

The room quited down as two more people joined us at the table.

Zack squeezed my hand and mouthed an "I got you".I nodded and smiled.

Me:Kele how is the part planning coming along for Thandi?

Kele:great actually.Its gonna be so nice.I'm glad you're feeling better.

Me:me too.

Bandile:well makoti,J erome and his parents wanted to inform the whole family that he out of prison and well you are family.

Me:of course baba.

Jerome cleared his throat and looked at me.

Jerome:I would like to really apologise for what happened almost two years ago.I saw the error of my ways and the person I should be apologising to is Taylor.I wronged her.I am sincerely sorry.I apologise from the bottom of my heart.

Everyone looked at me and my heart skipped a beat as I squeezed Zack's hand.

Me:I forgive you.Yes I was hurt by your actions and its in the past.We have to let go to heal don't we Jerome?

I said raising an eyebrow as he put a smile in place.He is just so fake but I did let go.

Jerome:of course.Thank you for your forgiveness and congrats for marrying my cousin.

Me:thank you.

He fist bumped with Zack who looked like he was not affected by a thing and all was good.

Jerome:Zack I hope I also have your forgiveness?

Zack:of course.Its in the past.Its the future we're moving towards isn't it love?

Me:of course.Its in the past and we're family now Jerome.Family sticks out for each other and doesn't do each other dirty right?

He shifted a bit in his seat as he nodded.

Zack took his glass full of juice and lifted it up.

Zack:to family...

Everyone toasted.

Me:cheers to family.

Everyone started chatting and Zack whispered in my ear.

Zack:we'll talk at home,be careful around him.Something is not right.

Me:I felt that.

Zack:did I tell you that I love you?

Me:no.

Zack:you're blushing again.

Me:stay away from me yoh!

He chuckled as he moved back and dug in to his food and I looked at my plate.

I ate a few forkfuls of the macaroni and decided to stick to the juice.

Zack:you don't like the food.

Me:the food is fine.You know why.

Zack:Let me go find something for you to eat in the kitchen.I don't want my wife starving.

Me:I'm not starving.

Zack:I'll be back.

He stood up and I just passed time talking to my father in law and my husband's crazy uncles.

Kacey as I said is a chatterbox and she just brings everyone together.And she said she's a nurse.I bet patients are never bored when she's doing rounds because she is great company.

Zack:I'm back.Eat now.

Me:Yes father.

He chuckled.

Zack:don't give me any ideas.

With that I ate as he talked with his father and after sometime the maids cleared the table and we stood up.

I walked around the garden with my juice breathing the fresh air.

I'll go back for dessert.Who can say no to a sugar rush?

I saw Jerome's mother approach me.

Sphe:I still don't like you.

Me:Its ok.I still can't hold it against you.You're family and you're probably thinking I lied.

Sphe:and you married his cousin.The one you met at a family gathering.

Me:but no one can determine fate nor destiny but either way I truly did forgive your son,excuse me.I think dessert is served.

I walked away.People like drama yoh!

.

.

.

.

Goodnight Readers <3

.

.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:54] Lynne: WDC

.

78

.

TAYLOR

Me:Ma thank you for having us for dinner.It was
really pleasant

Lindi:Thank you guys for coming but you guys should visit more

Zack:we will ma,right now we need to head home

Zack hugged his mother and kissed her cheek

Zack:bye ma

Me:take care

Lindi:bye kids

Zack placed his hand on the small of my back as we headed to the car

I yawned as Zack looked at me.

Zack:tired love?

Me:a little

He opened the car door for me and I got inside as he went to his side

Me:I think I'm gonna sleep for a bit,can you please wake me up when we get home?

Zack:ok love

He started the car and I just closed my eyes.I hate

always feeling this tired

.

ZACK

On the way home I kept thinking about the encounter Taylor had with Jerome in her office and when we saw him tonight. I don't know why I can't actually see his plans for the future but there is darkness within him. I want to keep Taylor far away from him. We need to pray about it, something bad might happen and the warning Rose gave me is still ringing in my head

I looked at my side and she was sleeping peacefully. When the car came to a halt, he got out and he went to her side to carry her inside

Her eyes opened and she yawned.

Tay: we're home?

Me: yes sweetheart. Sleep. We'll talk tomorrow okay my love?

Tay: ok

She closed her eyes as she snuggled against my

chest

.

At Camilla's house

Milla:babe are they asleep?

Will nodded as he sat next to his wife

Milla:I'm worried(sighing)

Will:about what?

Milla:Taylor,I have this feeling that something is wrong and it won't be good for any of us.Tell me I'm wrong babe,you're the one with the gift between the two of us.

Will shook his head

Will:We'll just have to pray for them love.Its all we can do.I also don't know whats going to happen but if something bad is going to happen Zack won't see it because it concerns him.Can we just pray for them?

Milla:okay?Can we pray now?

Will:of course.Place your hands on mine

Milla did as her husband asked as they closed their eyes and started their prayer

.

At Jerome's house

Jerome walked in his room and the lights started to flicker. His heart skipped a bit as he looked around the room and felt cold. Very cold.

Jerome: who's there? show yourself.

The light went out and he looked around.

Jerome: okay, whatever prank this is, it's not funny.

"It's not a prank"

He heard the voice that echoed around the room and he couldn't pinpoint where it came from. He blinked and then rubbed his eyes.

He saw a shadow move across the room.

Jerome: who are you?

"Lucifer"

Jerome laughed.

J ero:not that religious shit,none of that exist

The devil laughed as he stood still.

"But I do exist and at this time many are against my kingdom.At this hour many are waging war against my kingdom"

J ero:o-k,so if you exist why aren't you fighting with those fighting you?

"I am but in a different way.You see J erome,I like you,you are the perfect person."

J ero:perfect for what?

"I know you hate a Taylor Tshelang Zulu"

Hate was not the accurate word J erome can use.He loathed her.She disgusted him to no end.

"I know how you are feeling,if she could've done what you asked that fateful night you would not have gone to prison.And don't listen to what they say about destiny,she had wanted your cousin.Does family do that to each other?"

The devil asked whilst still hiding in the shadows

J ero:no,family does not do that.

"Wake up J erome,they took you for a fool.Your cousin,your own blood cousin J erome.The Prophet.The holier than thou one took what was rightfully yours."

I felt my anger and hate towards them surge

"Aah yes,those feelings you have for them is what attracted me to you.You see your cousin is a very big threat to a kingdom as he helps people see the light each and everyday and talks to the people I called family before I was sent down to earth.He talks to those traitors Ramiel and Uriel.You see he is traitorous.And he betrayed you.And the Taylor she was supposed to be yours.That was destiny J erome.And she too is starting to become a nuisance to my kingdom since she 'heals' the spirit"

J ero:so how is that any of my concern now?

"Now now J erome,I haven't got to the good part yet.They are expecting"

J erome's eyes widened

Jerome:they never said anything

"It's because your cousin knows what his wife is carrying. The woman who was supposed to be yours. You see that child she's carrying, if the child ever sees daylight it's a much bigger threat than both his parents combined and I cannot get through to your cousin because he is heavily protected. I can't get an inch closer to him but well you can solve the problem"

Jerome:how?

"Well, we can kill the child and I can give you everything to your heart's desire. Anything you name it, I can give you. All the earth's riches, titles, the throne, beautiful women. Everything. Kill the child. Kill the child Taylor is carrying. Kill the child. You'll tell me what you decided when I meet you again Jerome. Think long and hard about it, it's an offer of a lifetime"

The shadow disappeared

.

.

Opera mini happened yesterday guys. I'm sorry.

.

.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:55] Lynne: WDC

.

79

.

At Jerome's house

Jerome blinked as he could no longer see the shadow. He thought about what was said.

It will be like he is selling his soul to the devil but what does he have to lose?

He loses nothing since his life has been over the minute he stepped into a prison cell.

He rubbed his jaw as he came to the decision that

will likely change the course of his whole life.

The lights flickered back on and he looked around his room.

.

ZACK

I watched her sleep as I got back into bed after my hours of prayer. Something is off.

Something was not right in his spirit and he felt it.

Me: God, what's going on? Is this what is supposed to happen?

She stirred a bit and he looked at her. He pushed her hair back and smiled.

Zack: I'll try to protect to protect you and the little one even if I die okay love?

I kissed the top of her head and I pulled her tight against me.

.

TAYLOR

I woke up all alone in bed and I felt cold.

Me:Babe?Love?Zack??

There was no reply.I called out for him again and still no reply.

I got out of bed and I was in his shirt.

I walked down the stairs.

Me:My love??

I walked to the kitchen and I found a note on the refrigerator door.

'Morning love.Be back later.Have a few issues to sort out,breakfast in the microwave.'

I sighed.Why didn't he wake me up when he left then?

I opened the microwave and took out the breakfast he made me,what time did he wake up to make me breakfast and still leave without me hearing a thing?Anyway I sat on the kitchen stool and started munching away.

.

I looked at myself in the mirror.I was getting fat.I flattened my palm against my tummy and it wasn't that flat.

Me:hey baby.Your daddy dodged us for the day but you know what me and you are going to spoil ourselves.We are going to buy new clothes okay?

I nodded to myself as I sent Zack a text telling him I'll be in town.

I went downstairs and rushed to the garage.

My phone rang.

Me:Hello.

Zack:Hi love,I'm kind of busy but please do pass by church.We need to talk.

Me:sounds serious.

Zack:It is.

Me:okay,bye then

Zack:bye and stay safe.

I frowned and agreed before I hung up.

I reversed the car out of the garage.

.

At Camila's house

She called Taylor numerous of times but it rang unanswered everytime.

Simon slowly walked to Milla and she picked him up.

Me:and what do you want.

Sim:da...dada.

She rolled her eyes.

Me:you see,you guys are traitors.You want your father when I'm with you?well dada aka daddy is in an important meeting or whatever he said it is.He is in that and you're stuck with me little man till dinner time.Deal with it.

Simon frowned looking at his mother and Camila mentally face palmed.

Milla:you even frown like him.I feel betrayed.

Simon looked at his mother confused as he stopped speaking his gibberish.

Milla:don't look at me like that,I will leave you with your siblings and they will bite you aah!

Milla's phone rang and she saw the caller i.d

Milla:you see your godmother?she is now calling me so I'll leave you with your siblings because I can't.

She placed him down and walked slowly with him to the playroom where his siblings were.

Milla:there,sibling reunion.

Olivia started to tear up when she saw her mom.

Milla:attention seeker.

She picked her up and walked out with her.

Milla:You four are going to spend a week with your grandparents.

She called Taylor again.

Tay:Hello.

Milla:I've been trying to get a hold of you.

Tay:I left my phone in the car and was still in town.

Milla:are you alright?

Tay:yes.What is is?

Milla:I feel like there is danger coming.Something bad.

Tay:I won't lie and say I can't sense the energy.

Milla:Pray and pray hard.

Tay:ok.I have to go,I'm heading to church.

Milla:okay.Bye,Olivia is tugging at my phone and she just might pull my hair.

Tay:bye Camilla and kiss the kids for me.

Milla:Ok.

She hung up and she looked at Olivia.

Milla:at least you look like me sweetie,your brothers are the bad ones.

Livvy:mama.

Milla:very good.Ka go rata wena waits e.

.

At Church

Taylor headed straight to Zack's office and she felt the spirit filled atmosphere. It was deep and heavy as she turned the door knob.

Taylor walked in as she looked at Zack who was sitting on his chair.

Tay: Hey.

Zack: hi love. Sit down.

She sat down and she could literally feel the spirit overflowing from him. Her hands shook as she sat down and she couldn't maintain eye contact with him.

She looked at her hands as he knelt in front of her.

Tay: I..you're to..too..

Zack smiled.

Zack: I know baby. Can we pray?

She nodded as he took her hands and she didn't attempt eye contact.

.

After an hour she still couldn't look at him and her

hands shook so bad.

Zack:baby we have a war in our hands,we have to be more vigilant and pray more.

She nodded as her hands shook.

Zack:and I know at the moment you can't be in my presence for long because you still have a long way to go in the spirit babe but baby we are going to be united.Something bad is going to happen and it might be sooner rather than later.

.

.

.

5 months later

.

.

.

.

.

[03/12, 09:55] Lynne: WDC

.

80

.

TAYLOR

He held my bulging waist as he placed a kiss on my cheek.

Zack:MaZulu umuhle nkosazana..

Me:thank you...

Zack:how's my champ doing in there?

Me:he's been kicking since this morning..

He held my tummy and I felt a kick.

Me:yoh!

Zack:I'm sorry love,did it hurt?

I nodded.It did hurt a bit.

Zack:we'll be meeting him soon.

Me:don't forget my scan today..

Zack:I won't love.Stay safe for me.

Me:we are always safe.

He just locked his lips with mine and he left.

As soon as he left I sat down.My legs are killing me and my tummy is big but we've embraced the changes.We've also been consistent in prayer and surprisingly J erome is nowhere to be seen which is strange too.

I opened my Bible as I recapped last night's Bible study with Zack and I'm growing spiritually so right now I'm all good.

Milla called me.

Me:Milla..

Milla:are you home?

Me:yep..I never go anywhere these days.I swear that I'm so so heavy and I walk like a penguin and the scan says I'm carrying one child.Nagana..

Milla:You'll deal Taylor...

Me:waiting for two months to pass by.I'll finally

meet my little angel.

Milla:I'm the godmother you know this.

She said in a duh tone.I chuckled.

Milla:But I'm just glad that you're safe and you're fine.We worry about you.

Me:I know you all do guys.

We talked for sometime before I said goodbye to go make myself something to eat.

.

J EROME

J erome was in an abandoned place as he held his head.The devil appeared to him as a shadow.

"Its time,J erome.We need to get rid of what she is carrying in her womb.It needs to die."

J erome:Yes master.

He had already agreed and as long as Taylor suffers he is good.He has been laying low for the past few months and he has been watching her though she didn't notice it.

She is very much pregnant and he would like to wipe that happiness from her life.

The devil laughed loudly as his laughter crackled in the whole room. His plan was finally coming together and it has been planned out. That thing Taylor is carrying will be no more and they have to physically kill the child. By whatever means.

The devil's shadow disappeared as he used Jerome's body as a host.

Jerome was pushed to the back as the devil saw it fit to do it himself. Kill the child or maybe kill the child and the woman.

.

Meanwhile Zack was with Vusi and Will intercessing. There was no rest for the wicked and they knew that they too would not rest since this feeling of overlooking danger is still looming over them.

When the prayer stopped they all sat down.

Vusi: I don't know now and it concerns you but since

it might involve you Zack you won't be able to see it.

Zack sighed as he looked at the guys.

Zack:I just hope that whatever utbis we overcome it because...

Will:You will we are a hundred percent behind you man.Through whatever.

They just all sat there deep in thought.Zack has been praying for months and even went to the mountain for few hours to see what will happen.Still nothing.He is a prophet but when God chooses not to reveal a thing to him there is nothing he can do about it.

.

TAYLOR

Now I was really bored.If I'm not at home feeling tired and sleeping the day away I'm trying to cook though I can't be on my feet for too long.

The lock turned and faces the direction.

Zack walked in and well he is always missed.

Me:hey love.

Zack:hi sweetheart.How was your day?

Me:same old same old.

Zack:want to go out tonight for dinner?

Me:I look like a whale.

Zack:my whale..

I frowned.

Me:So I'm a whale to to you?

He shook his head.

Zack:noo,I'm sorry love.You're perfect to me.

He said as he sat down next to me and placed my legs on his lap.

Zack:then after dinner I might give you a mass age.

I smiled.

Me:I would love that.

He lifted my chin and we shared a kiss.He deepened it and I broke it.

Me:we have tomorrow for that.

He cocked an eyebrow as he smiled.

Zack:planning something for Valentine's?

I laughed.

Me:God no..Nothing fits me love so you'll have to deal with whatever.

Zack:and I wouldn't have it any other way.

.

.

LIKE,COMMENT,SHARE,MENTION

[03/12, 09:55] Lynne: WDC

.

81

.

Zack put his wife to sleep after prayer,she had enjoyed herself at the restaurant and seeing her happy makes him happy

He headed to his prayer room. Even if he could see a glimpse of what will happen to them in future.

Rose appeared.

Rose: blessed the Lord shall be with you in troubles.

Zack: What's going to happen?

Rose: whatever that's going to happen, stay strong in your faith. Remain blessed.

She disappeared after that leaving Zack wondering about the future.

He continued to pray and just prayed that they all have the strength to deal with whatever that might happen.

.

At Jerome's

Jerome sat down as the plan replayed over and over again in his mind. This was time for payback and he won't feel guilty about what he has to do.

It's for the greater good.

.

TAYLOR

In the morning I was alone yet again when I woke up. I looked around the room to check if he was still there but nothing.

I slowly got out of bed and waddled to the bathroom

After I was done, I walked out of the room and down the stairs where I found him in the kitchen making breakfast. Shirtless.

Me: morning my love.

Zack: morning sunshine, You ruined the surprise. I was supposed to bring you breakfast in bed.

I chuckled.

Me: sorry.

Zack: go sit down in the lounge, you shouldn't be on your feet for too long.

He left the potato to go guide me to the sofa.

I sat down and he bent down to kiss me. He bit my lower lip.

Zack:I love you Tshepang.And happy Valentines sweetheart.

Me:happy valentines to you too my love.

He smiled and I was reminded by how blessed I am to be his wife and helper.

He headed to the kitchen and continued with breakfast.

I just checked the various channel stations.

I couldn't wait to meet our baby.He might look like Zack but we're having our firstborn and it's very exciting that we get to be parents to a whole human being.Who knew my life would turn out be like this.

Who knew I would be married to this wonderful man of God,destiny just had a way of making us collide.

I rubbed my tummy and I sighed Feeling this heavy but exhausting.

Zack:almost done my love.

Me:alright babe.

He came a few moments later with a tray filled with various foods and a red rose on the tray.

Zack:there you go Mrs Zulu.

Me:thank you.

Zack:eat up my love.

I looked at him and he picked the spoon and started wanted to try and feed me.

Me:I can do it myself(laughing)

Zack:let me.

Me:no I'm not a baby love.

Zack chuckled as he just ignored me and tried to feed me.

Me:babe no.

I didn't open my mouth.

Zack:Taylor say aah...

I shook my head as he chuckled

Zack:my love,work with me here..

I looked at him and well the food looks nice.He

didn't show any signs of relenting too.

I posted and he smiled.

Zack:I know that look,the 'I don't want this but I have no choice but to agree'look.

I shrugged.

Me:the food Zack..

He laughed as he started feeding me.

When he was done well he took the plates to the kitchen since he's the one who decided to do it all today.

Me:I was planning on checking up on many today.

Zack:at the royal palace?

I nodded.

Zack:can I at least drop you off,I don't want you driving my love.

I nodded and slowly stood up.I hate looking like an elephant and it's all on Zack.All on him.

.

"Destiny cannot be avoided and whatever that happens stay strong"

Camilla repeated after the podcast she was listening to. She closed her eyes as she listened intently to the teaching.

She was very focused in the study room.

She removed her headphones and then tried to digest the teaching.

Destiny...destiny..

What is destiny? she asked herself.

And how does destiny work on a daily basis.

She sighed and walked out of the room to go check Will and the kids.

[03/12, 09:56] Lynne: WDC

.

82

.

Zack was by his parent's place.

Zack:I'll pick you up when you're done okay love?

Taylor nodded as she got out of the car and Zack got out too.

He accompanied her inside the house.

He looked at her as his mother went out to meet them.

Zack:You sure about this,you can visit some other time.

Taylor:Its okay.Hello ma

She hugged her mother in law as Zack greeted his mother.

Taylor:Babe I'll be fine.

Zack nodded as he hugged his wife and planted a soft kiss on the top of her head.

Lindi:Zack she's fine.You go.

Zack left as Lindiwe led Taylor to the dining room.

Taylor:Its been a while mother.

Lindi:at least you made time to visit,how is my

grandbaby treating you?

Taylor:I'm always so tired and I can't wait to pop this baby out.I look like a whale.

Lindi laughed as she headed to the kitchen and left Taylor all alone in the dining room.

Taylor looked around and she rubbed her hands together.Its been a while since she had been here and she knows that her mother in law is going to spoil her rotten this Valentine's day.

Lindi came back with a fruit salad and handed it to Taylor.

Taylor looked at the salad and well she was fat already so why the hell not?

She dug in as she had small talk with Lindi.

Taylor:You should see the nursery,its so so cute.

Lindi:Did you make it yourself?

Taylor:we did,I picked the colors and Zack painted.Any news about where Jerome is?

Lindi sadly shook her head.She too wondered

where he was because it's like he had just disappeared from the face of the earth and no one had any idea about where he was.

Lindi:He's not that important.Lets get you comfortable.

.

Jerome hid in the closet as he was able to get in undetected.The devil has a lot of ways to get his evil deeds done and as thus no one was able to sense him.

The bedroom door opened.

Taylor walked in as she looked around the room.It felt weird.

Lindi:You can rest since you said you're tired.

Taylor:whose room was this?

Lindi chuckled.

Lindi:Zachariah's.....

Taylor:oh..its pretty simple.

Lindi:it was pretty dramatic till he asked for it to

repainted.

Taylor:Okay...But thank you for your company.

Lindi nodded as Taylor took out her phone from her bag.

She was no longer feeling sleepy.She had a weird feeling about all of this.

She looked around yet again as she dialled Zack.

The phone rang two times before he answered.

Zack:my rib.

Taylor blushed as she tucked her hair behind her ear.Gosh!

Taylor:sthandwa...

Zack:how was your day my love?

Taylor:it was good,can you come pick me up in 30 minutes?I want to come home.

At his side Zack looked at his watch and he gave her a response.

Zack:okay love.See you then.

Taylor hung up as she put her phone in her bag.

She looked at the room once more before she slowly walked to the door.

As she was about to step outside the door, it closed with a force.

She jumped with her heavy stomach as she placed a hand protectively on the tummy.

Her heart pounded. What the hell was that?

The windows were closed. They didn't open them did they?

She slowly turned as her pulse rate picked up and she tried her best to calm herself.

She closed her eyes and when she was fully turned she opened them.

Jerome: Boo!

She jumped again and he gave her a sadistic ass smile that crawled all over her skin giving her goosebumps.

The room was getting cold and she looked at him

as her mind tried to form all sorts of possible theories.

Jerome:I did tell you he won't be here to protect you and here we are six months later from the time I told you that.

Taylor's eyes died with tears.

She turned and tried the door but it was locked.

Taylor:how..h..how did (shaking voice)you close the door.

Jerome:I have my ways sister in law.Now where was I?

Taylor shook her head as tears were quick to fall down her cheeks.

Taylor:let me go and I won't tell anyone.

Jerome chuckled darkly looking at the pregnant Taylor.He had one mission and he was going to get help in killing whatever that was in her stomach.

Jerome:nah uh uh sweetheart.Consider this as revenge

Taylor looked at him and saw the crazed look on his face.

Taylor:J erome J esus can help you.

He shook his head.

J erome:That name won't do a thing,you're trapped and your J esus won't save you will he?

Taylor:I serve a LIVING GOD,He is capable of everything.

J erome:Shut up(Double voice)

Taylor's eyes widened.His eyes turned black as he looked at her.And his voice had doubled.

J erome:We have to kill that thing,its not a long procedure (deeper voice)

Lucifer had taken control of J erome's body using it as a hoat6to get o with his own agenda.

He was going to kill that thing that's a danger to his kingdom.

He removed the knife from J erome's J ean pocket.

Taylor swallowed as she saw the size of the knife

Taylor:J es us!J es us!J es us!

She chanted over and over again and she saw
J erome pause then look at her.

He smiled as two fangs showed form his mouth
and she shuddered.

J erome:Now even if you scream,they won't hear
you.

The room went dark and Taylor's heart pounded as
she prayed silently...

She didn't want to die,she had to bring her baby to
this world.

Taylor:J erome I can heal you,don't do this.God is
compassionate He forgives everyone

She said with a shaky voice as tears cascaded
down her pink cheeks.

She held her stomach protectively as she couldn't
see in darkness.

J erome:that thing is dying.

Taylor:Heeeelp!Someone!

She heard a laughter echo throughout the room and she shed more tears. She prayed that Zack would come rescue her then.

She blinked her tears away as she rubbed her eyes with her fists.

She couldn't see a thing.

Her heart pounded so hard it felt it could jump out of her chest.

The devil didn't want to waste time, killing the child was important.

With swift speed he was in front of her and without no warning lodged the shark knife blade in Taylor's tummy.

She screamed so loud as she felt the stab.

Her baby!

The devil removed the knife and he stabbed it on the same place again and lodged it much deeper and Taylor felt the life in her draw away.

She collapsed on the floor as her blood curdling screams tore through the room.

The devil laughed. The baby was not dead yet, he could sense its life though faint.

Jerome: not yet done.

He removed the knife as Taylor cried out at the pain..

The knife was lodged on the other side of her tummy as red crimson surrounded her and she blinked rapidly as her vision slowly failed her.

Jerome: Done!

.

Next insert loading

[03/12, 09:56] Lynne: WDC

.

83

.

Zack felt unsettled in his spirit.

His heart was too heavy so he decided to just jump in the car and head to his mother's place.

He dialled Taylor's phone but it just rang unanswered.

He called his mother.

Zack:Ma,where is Taylor?

Lindi:I left her in your old room,she wanted to rest.

Zack:Check on her please.

Lindiwe frowned.She knew her son was a man of God but what could be wrong with her daughter in law?

She agreed to check on Taylor and Zack hung as he sped through traffic.

Lindiwe walked to Zack's old room and knocked.

Lindi:hello,Taylor baby are you there?

There was silence and Lindiwe felt a chill in her spine.She tried to open the door but it was locked.How?She took the keys when she left.

Londi:Taylor we're worried about you open the

door(knocking)

Silence followed and she sighed.

Lindi:Taylor..

She knocked furiously on the door and tried opening it but it was locked. There was no sound coming from the room.

She rubbed her palms together as she looked at the door.

Something weird was going on and she wondered what.

Jerome looked at Taylor's bloody body on the floor as the devil left his body.

He looked around and there was no way out of the place other than the door.

He looked at her pale face and blood continued to flow from the wounds on her tummy and the knife was still lodged in her belly.

He felt sorry for her for a moment before he shook

his head and told himself it was the right decision. He had gotten his revenge on her in the most painful way.

Jerome: It didn't have to end like this Taylor. It wasn't supposed to end like this.

He murmured to himself as he looked at her once again.

The threat was eliminated, the baby was dead.

.

Zack rushed into the house and he found his mother worried.

Zack: where is my wife ma?

Lindi: the room is locked but I didn't lock it.

Zack shed his blazer as he rushed up the stairs, taking two steps at a time.

He had a bad feeling. He walked to his former bedroom and tried the door and it was locked.

He had no time for this really.

He just summoned a warrior angel who opened the

door with so much force the floor shook.

He walked inside and what he saw broke his heart into tiny pieces as tears welled in his eyes and he saw his cousin facing the window.

Jerome: There she is, the threat eliminated. Glad I could be of service cousin.

Zack fumed but he had to focus on his bleeding wife who had a knife lodged in her tummy.

Zack: It will all come back to bite you Jerome, being used by Lucifer is never really worth it and no.. you won't get yo prison dear cousin. You will suffer. Suffer. Hell on earth. Hope you're happy you killed an innocent soul and almost took another.

He picked Taylor up as he walked out.

She was bleeding profusely and she was so pale.

Zack: stay with me darling, stay with me please.

He begged her and his mother gasped when he saw her daughter in law.

Zack: call the police, Jerome did this.

His mother nodded as she shed tears looking at Taylor.

Zack rushed to his car and placed her gently on the seat.

Zack:I'm so sorry baby.so so sorry baby that this happened but...

His lips vibrated as tears blurred his vision.It was breaking him to see her this way and then having to be brave for her sake and recovery.

He rushed to his side and started the car.

He drove as fast as he could to the hospital. He had to save them.They lost one of the children but he has to take her to the hospital in time to save her and the.baby.

With that he stepped on the accelerator more and increased his speed to the hospital.

.

Sirens wailed as the Police made their way to the castle.

Jerome was oddly cool and that had surprised

Lindiwe who wondered how the hell he entered the house without any of the royal guards seeing him.

He gave himself over to the police without any hesitation and he was smiling. Something was off about him.

The king made his way to the castle when he spotted the police cars.

He asked himself what the matter could be but he should make it fast to try and find out.

Just as when he entered the house his phone rang and he answered.

Bandile: Zack.

Zack's voice shook a bit and Bandile frowned. His son was the strongest what could be wrong?

Zack: dad.. it-the.. he.. he stabbed her and now she is in a coma (sniffing)

Bandile: You're not making any sense Zachariah.. what happened?

He couldn't believe that the prophet was crying. Something bad must have happened.

Zack:J erome..stabbed Taylor and she's in hospital.
Bandile's mouth went wide open as he digested the news.

Zack hung up and Bandile walked inside the palace and he saw the police handcuffing J erome.

Lindiwe hugged her husband and he held her in his arms as J erome walked out with the police.

Lindiwe sobbed.She didn't know how J erome entered the place but he hurt their daughter and grandchild.She prayed that Taylor and the baby make it out alive because seeing that knife lodged in her stomach was something that was never going to leave her memory for a pretty long time.

.

Zack's hair was a mess as he unbuttoned the first two buttons of his shirt.

Ever since they said Taylor is being put in a medically induced coma he has not heard anything ever since.

He had called family but they will take time to be

here.

Zack:(silently pleading to God)Take me Lord and save them.I failed to protect them.It was my duty as her husband.Take me Father and save their lives.

Tears filled his eyes once again as he sat down on the bench.

Their Valentine's Day turned out to be the worst.

He had already planned a surprise for his small wife.

He rubbed his eyes multiple of times as he thought about the past months.

Zack:(whispering)God is this the storm that Rose talked about?losing our child?God that woman is my everything,I don't think I'm ready to lose her yet....

Tears blurred his vision as he brought his hands up to his face.

He would switch places with her anyday.Why did they have to attack his wife, she was his weak spot and if anything would break her,he would be broken as he is now.

.

Ava had called her father and mother back in Avalore. Taylor was in hospital stabbed by that good for nothing criminal.

She was panicking about the state in which her daughter was in.

Her heart pounded as she got inside the hospital and she found Zack with his parents.

Zack's mind was not present and she saw the toll it had taken on Zack.

Ava: how is she?

Zack shook his head as an indication of no news.

Ava sighed as she sat down on the bench.

.

LIKE, COMMENT, SHARE, MENTION

[03/12, 09:57] Lynne: WDC

.

.

The doctor walked over to them.

Dr:Can I see Mrs Zulu's next of kin...

Zack stood up and followed the doctor to the office.

Dr:take a seat Mr Zulu

He sat down as she opened various files.

Dr:well we have assessed her and she is in a medically induced coma.We also managed to remove the knife hence the reason we took long to update you sir.

She fixed her glasses as she looked at Mr Zululu.

Dr:We would like permission to perform an emergency caesarean procedure on your wife sir.

Zack loved his jaw as he sighed.

The doctor placed the documents in front of him.

Dr:that's the only way we can take the baby out,otherwise if we leave it for too long the wounds caused by the knife will lead to severe scarring as they are already deep.

He took the pen and browsed through the papers. He put his signature where it was needed.

Zack: is that all Dr?

Dr: yes, if there is any further change we will update you.

Zack nodded as he stood up and walked to the door.

He never thought they would be here like this.

The doctor sighed as she looked at the consent forms.

The family looked at Zack who was slowly approaching them. Camila had decided to come along with Will. Ava had called them and she came as fast as she could.

She didn't get the exact details on what happened but she had to be there for her friend.

She sat down as Zack sat down.

Milla: What happened?

Ava: what did the doctor say? will she be alright?

Lindi:are you okay Zack?

Zack looked at them.

Zack:they managed to remove the knife and she is about to under go an emergency c-section.

Ava gasped as tears filled her eyes.

Zack:She will be fine.

She shook her head.How?The healer herself cannot heal herself and she is in danger.

Zack:excuse me...

He stood up and walked out of the waiting room with his hands deep in his pockets.

He blinked the tears away.

Zack thought about what he could do.Maybe he could try to heal her or it doesn't work like that when it involves family?

He felt so useless.Completely and utterly.

.

Meanwhile at the Radebe palace.....

Eva nodded as she listened on the phone.

Eva:we will check on the situation this side
mom.Okay bye...

She hung up and she looked at Sanele who was
looking at her.

She sighed.

Eva:Taylor is in hospital.

Sanele looked at her like she's crazy.

Eva:I'm serious,she is in hospital and mom asked
us to check on her.Apparentlybits not looking good.

Sanele digested the news.His daughter was in
hospital and he had yet to establish a relationship
with her.

Sanele:can we go now?

Eva:let me ask which hospital.

Eva called her twin.

Ava:hello.

Eva:hi,I wanted to ask which hospital Taylor is in?

Ava:who told you she's in hospital?

Eva sighed she and her sister didn't have the best relationships but can they at least put their differences aside for her daughter's sake. Yes at first she didn't like the girl at all but honestly she hasn't done her any wrong.

Eva:we are not the best of friends or sisters Elena but can we put that aside for Taylor...

There was silence before Ava told her which hospital her daughter was in.

Eva:thank you,me and Sanele are coming over there in a few minutes.Bye.

She hung up as she took her bag.

Eva:we can go,I got the name.

They left their place to make their way to the hospital.

.

Jerome admitted to stabbing Taylor.

The police are shocked because this was the same

man who attempted to rape Taylor and he stabbed Taylor now.

Jerome smiled. He knew he had nothing to lose, his life had been over years ago when Taylor reported him so even if he dies in prison he got his revenge.

He hoped the baby is dead. And Taylor is broken and gets a taste of how pain is.

The police handcuffed him as they led him to the holding cells as he will await yet another trial for the attempted murder of Mrs Taylor Tshepang Zulu.

Jerome: It was necessary really.

He said in a sadistic tone and the police officers who were leading him towards the cell looked at him like he's a deranged fool.

They shook their heads as they shoved him inside the cell.

.

.

A WEEK LATER

[03/12, 09:57] Lynne: WDC

.

85

.

Zack stood in that room watching her small body in the little incubator.

She looked so precious,
so so precious.

Zack: your mama is trying to fight for her life, you are our gift okay?

He touched the incubator as the baby looked at him with her small eyes. He wiped a tear that fell.

He walked out and went to Taylor's room.

She was just lying there. Nothing.

He held her hand as he sat down.

Zack: Baby come back to us. We need you, me and your child need you baby. She needs a mother sweetheart. The decision to come back to us is up

to you.I did my best,I prayed and begged God to bring you back to us (sighing)But its all up to you.Amandla needs you baby....

He rubbed her hand as he looked at his wife.

.

Taylor:hello...

There was darkness all around her as she looked.

Where was she?she kept asking herself that question.

She walked around in darkness that enveloped her surroundings.

Taylor:Let there be light..

She said sounding so unsure about what else to do.Then light appeared and she could see her surroundings,it was green.

Taylor:wow..

She still wondered where she was but she had no recollection of her past,she didn't know how she ended up here.

She walked around and she saw kids playing in the green pastures and they looked so happy.

She sat down on a bench and smiled as she looked at the kids.

Would she have kids and where was she?it looked so peaceful and she felt so at home.

Her spirit wasn't weary as she looked around.

She felt a presence sit next to her.

She turned her eyes as the light almost blinded her.

She looked ahead as her heart beat sped up a bit.

"Taylor,how are you blessed?"

She looked straight ahead and she linked her fingers together.

Taylor:fine,where am I?and who are you?

"You are in paradise,in other words your soul made it into the gates of heaven dear child since the Father allowed it to be so."

Her eyes widened as she looked at the kids running around.

Taylor:those kids look so happy.

"They are,they are with their Creator Taylor"

She nodded

Taylor:How did I end up in heaven and why can't I remember my past?

The bright figure stood as her light dimmed down and Taylor was able to see the wings and the eyes that were so bright.She has never seen an Angel before.

Taylor:an angel..wow..just..whoa..

"Angel responsible for healing,call me Raphael."

Taylor nodded as she looked at the angel.Angels are so good looking though.

Raphael:some Taylor,some are not meant for your eyes,read the first chapter of the book of Ezekiel blessed.

Taylor nodded.

Taylor:you hear my thoughts?

Raphael:nothing is hidden from the Father.

Taylor:why can't I remember my past?

Raphael:Your past needs you to address it on earth and here we want to show you what difference you can make.

Taylor:okay..so.. you're the angel of healing.Thats so cool.Like how do you do it?

Raphael:I can only heal when asked to by people like you..

Taylor frowned

Taylor:people like me?

Raphael:follow me..

Taylor:okay..people like me?

She asked once more,she must be annoying the angel.

Raphael:yes you are but I have to answer then..

Taylor:okay I'm waiting.

She said with a smile,she can get used to living here.

She followed Angel Raphael to God knows where.

She was with a real life angel..bet Zack sees them all the time.

Wait...she frowned as she put her finger on her cheek.

Zack.Zack.Its a he and why would he see Angel's all the time.

Taylor:who is Zack,I just had a thought about him seeing Angels all the time

Raphael:He is one of the Lord's servant.One of His favourites too.He does great things for the Kingdom.

Taylor nodded.Why would she think of him.

Taylor:what was he to me?

Raphael:your husband..

She formed an ooh.

Taylor:wait I was married to this great man of God.Literally the GOAT?

Raphael:still are,you're not dead.J ust that your soul is in another realm.

Taylor:why would a man of his calibre marry me?

Raphael: You were his destiny, his wife long before you both met.

Taylor: fascinating, what really happened for me to be here?

She and Raphael arrived at their destination and she saw so many babies..

Taylor: the babies.. are they dead?

The angel nodded his head.

Raphael: some through abortions, some murdered, miscarried, still births. They grow up here.

Taylor: wow but why bring me here?

Raphael: We're here to see a special baby.

Taylor: special.. wait why me?

Raphael walked to the end of the room they were in and stood by the crib.

Taylor followed him briskly and she looked at the baby.

Taylor: he looks so cute, whose baby is he? the mother must be devastated but at least her baby is

with angels.

Raphael:pick him up.

She did and she felt a connection with the cute baby boy.He looked a little familiar ut she couldn't put her finger on it

Taylor:hey baby,if I was your mommy I would name you Maatla, that means strength it suits you.

Raphael:He was destined to be greater than his father.

Taylor:wow,such a special baby indeed.

She cooed at the child in her arms.

Raphael:heaven tried its level best but sometimes evil does take place.

Taylor:his mother must be devastated.What made him special?

Raphael:his mother is a healer and his father is a prophet,the child himself was greater than both of his parents combined.

Taylor:boy,the world missed out but at least you're

happy here.He is happy right?

Raphael:he is happy..

Taylor:if he was mine..he is so cute..

Raphael:He is yours...

Taylor's heart stopped beating for a bit as she looked at angel Raphael then the baby in her arms.

.

LIKE,COMMENT,SHARE,MENTION

[03/12, 09:57] Lynne: WDC

.

86

.

Taylor:if he was mine..he is so cute..

Raphael:He is yours...

Taylor's heart stopped beating for a bit as she looked at angel Raphael then the baby in her arms.

Taylor:what do you mean?

Raphael:Well Taylor you were pregnant with twins and you lost one.Thebone you're holding in your arms.

Taylor looked at the angel then at the baby she was holding.

He was hers.

Taylor placed the baby down and she sat down to try and think a outhit all.She was holding her baby,he actual baby.

What happened to her?she didn't know how she ended up this side and now she was holding her baby,that meant he was dead.

The angel made her look ahead as a screen appeared.

Raphael:your life Taylor and why you need to wake up regardless.Taylor looked at the screen.

She watched her life play out before her eyes as tears filled her eyes.

This can't be real.

Raphael:I'm afraid it is Taylor.

She saw everything from the attempted rape to the murder of her child. The last time she had opened her eyes.

Taylor: So he killed my child.

Raphael: the devil had possessed him and he also allowed himself to be used by the devil.

Taylor: I was carrying two kids..

Raphael: yes...

Taylor sighed as her eyes filled with tears once again. She didn't want to leave her child.

Taylor: I don't want to leave him, he is precious. The world is so cruel. I can't go back.

Raphael: the world needs you. You are a healer. When you heal I am always present.

Taylor: but....

Raphael: Taylor you can't lose faith now when you have come so far, if you can't heal from your own pain how will you heal the broken hearted.

Taylor shook her head.

Taylor:But I don't remember most of it happening.I want to stay here,I can look after the babies.

Raphael:Look at the screen.

She did and she saw Zack by her bedside holding her hand.

Raphael:he has prayed each and every day for you Taylor,he hasn't given up his trust on God.He still believes that everything happens for a reason even though he too lost a child.That is faith.

Wow!

Raphael:he may be the GOAT as you say but you lying there is breaking him as thus weakening him.He needs you to come back to him.

Taylor:I..I...

She looked at the screen.

Raphael:you have a lot of questions.

Taylor:so many,why didn't God stop all of this.

Raphael:God always wants the best for His children and when bad things happen,you all blame Him

when He did nothing wrong.

Taylor:why didn't he do something then?

Raphael:sometimes pain is meant to strengthen you and not break you

Taylor sighed She still didn't get the logic.

.

Zack sighed as he looked at her body.He rubbed her hand as he placed a kiss on it.

Zack:I love you and I still believe that you will come back to me,to us.

He stood up and he walked out of her room and headed to the nursery.

One of the nurses was changing Amandla's diaper and he smiled.She looked so much like Taylor with her curly black hair.

He walked to where Amandla was and he gave her his finger which she wrapped with all of her hand.

He smiled at the baby who looked so cute and she was everything.

Zack:hey Amy.

He asked the nice if he could hold her,it would be his first time since she was born

The nurse agreed and she picked Amandla and gave her to Zack gently.Telling him hoe to hold her

She felt so so small in his arms he was scared he was going to break her

Zack:hey princess,I finally got to hold you sweetie.You are such a fighter.Daddy loves you okay.

.

Had to post even though I am tired.Goodnight readers

[03/12, 09:58] Lynne: WDC

.

87

.

Brooding~ Victoria Orenze

.

Taylor sat down and she contemplated her life.

Was she willing to go back to the world? she just saw her baby here.

Raphael approached her and sat down next to her.

Raphael: Taylor it's not only your husband who needs you but also your daughter..

Taylor's eyes widened in surprise as she looked at the angel.

Taylor: I thought my child died and I was holding him.

Raphael: You were carrying twins and well God knew that if it was known that you were carrying twins they would have both died but the other baby survived.

Taylor's eyes glistened with hushed tears. She had another child and she didn't lose at all.

Taylor: Did Zack know?

Raphael: he knew. But he didn't even tell you though.

Taylor:why?

Raphael:Your safety,he cares deeply about your wellbeing and he had a hunch that they might attack your child.

Taylor:he knew that my baby was powerful?

Raphael:yes he knew...

She sighed as the tears fell down her cheeks,her husband knew and didn't tell her a thing about it.

Taylor:what if I do..don't want to go back?

Raphael:you have to.Your work on earth is not yet done dear child and as thus heaven is not yet ready for you.

Taylor:There is a lot of evil on earth and I don't want to go back.

Raphael:I know but evil has been existing for a centuries and you are still needed to heal the broken hearts.

She sighed.

Taylor:how can I heal when I am broken

myself?How?tell me how am I supposed to get over the death of an innocent baby who happened to be mine and then go back to earth and take care of another while hurting?I want to meet the child but what seeing the other twin is going to hurt me more?Why did God let this happen?

Tears filled her eyes again and she looked at the angel who remained silent.

She was hurt that she lost a child and hela bit happy that the other survived though she never knew she was carrying twins.

She wiped her tears away but they kept on coming back and back till she let them flow and they trickled down her cheeks and onto her shoulder as the snort also mixed up with the tears.

She lost a baby she carried a whole nine months all cause of the evil that didn't like the light.

.

Zack left the room as he headed to the waiting room where some of the family was present.

Lindi handed him coffee which he gladly took.

He sipped on it. He still believed that his wife will wake up. She has to For them if not for herself.

.

Meanwhile at the jail...

Jerome looked around the prison cell. He was charged with attempted murder and it looked like he was not going to get any parole.

He rubbed his head as he began to hear voices in his head.

He held it as the voices got louder and he heard babies crying too.

Jerome: no...no...

He continue to hear those voices all alone in the dark prison cell and he screamed wanting the voices to stop but they didn't.

.

Today we are on a marathon and if your admin dies trying to post more than three today so be it

Happy Sunday

[03/12, 09:58] Lynne: WDC

.

88

.

Taylor finally brought her hands together as she looked at the angel of healing.

She had come to her decision.

Taylor:evil happens all the time right?

The angel nodded.

Taylor:and I can't let pain control me..okay.Lets do this.I am going back to earth.

Raphael:excellent choice.The Father is pleased with you,your child is safe here.

Taylor:can I see him for one last time?

Taylor syoodup as she followed the angel back to where the babies were.

She walked qith him to the end of the room and she

picked Maatla immediately as tears filled her eyes.

Taylor: baby boy, I am your mommy and I love you though, I never spent time with you... I... I..

Her tears hit the baby's cheek who was looking at her with newfound curiosity.

Taylor smiled at the baby's innocence as tears streamed down her cheeks. She lost this child. No this child was murdered.

Taylor: you are still loved (smiling sadly) even if your daddy never met you, you.. you are with the creator. I love you and please grow up to be your twin's guardian angel.

More tears stung her eyes as she was holding the baby in her arms. He looked a lot like Zack and this was the last time she was going to see her baby till she actually dies when her time on earth is really over.

She sat down and cuddled the baby to sleep while her heart broke at the thought of leaving him here.

Taylor: will I remember my time here?

The angel shook his head and Taylor knew she was not going to remember a thing. She had to be strong when she woke up and not break down once she hears she lost a son.

She put the baby to sleep and placed him back.

She wiped her tears and she took his little hand and placed a soft kiss on his skin.

Taylor: I will always love you and...

She wiped more tears and looked at the angel.

Taylor: I am ready, I can go back now.

Raphael: Very well....

Taylor closed her eyes.

.

At the hospital room Zack held her hand and he kissed it.

Zack: Tshepi babe, come back to me. I believe you will. It is not your time yet...

He bent his head as he said a short prayer for his wife. He knew that she couldn't die now. It was not

yet time.

Zack:Taylor come back.

The machines startwd beeping as he held her hand and he looked at the machines that kept her alive.

Her fingers twitched as he was holding it and the seed of hope blossomed in his chest.

He pressed the emergency button and a whole load of doctoea and nursea got inside the room.

He was asked to leave and he did.

The family looked at him as he saton the bench.

Ava:what is wrong?

Zack:she might be awake...

Tears filled Ava's eyes at the possibility of her daughter living again.She was missed and just a whole week without her was already hard

Zack hoped he was right and it was not a false alarm,that she will wake up a few hours from now.

Eva gave her husband a cup of coffee and she held his hand as he squeezed it tight.

Everyone was vouching for Taylor to be alright.

Her grandmother couldn't stay for too long since the old King's health was deteriorating and his life was in the balance.

The family healer herself was in hospital fighting for her life so all they did was pray.

Zack had not been to church the whole week but he kept everyone in his prayers and most especially his wife and kid.

He didn't want Taylor to relapse again once she remembers what happened to her.

It took them a whole lot for her to heal and now she will bear the physical scars of the ordeal that took place. Tears filled his eyes at the thought of Taylor falling off the rails once again.

She had to fight this. They would do it together.

.

Five hours later.....

She opened her eyes as the strong light hit her. She squinted them and opened them again.

She felt a heaviness on her legs and she squinted her eyes and she saw him sleeping.

She didn't know why she was even in hospital.

She tried to move her hand but it felt heavy like it hasn't been used.

She sighed and she tried to remember why she was here.

She closed her eyes and she juggled her memory.

It finally clicked that she was pregnant and she moved her hand to her stomach. It was flat.

She looked around the room and she tried to remember more.

What happened.

She closed her eyes and sleep took over while she tried to remember what happened to her.

.

In the morning.

At the police cells

Jerome's mother visited him and she cried as she looked at him.

He was no longer himself. He was acting crazy and it broke her heart to see her son like that.

Why couldn't he let Taylor be since he had asked for forgiveness?

Why try to kill her and her child and not move on?

She honestly did not know what motivated him to do so.

She looked at him as he looked like he didn't even notice her presence as he kept on looking at the ceiling and around the room.

Sphe: Jerome?

Jerome: who is Jerome?

Tears filled her eyes as she looked at him. He was not himself at all.

She called the officer as she asked to be escorted out of the room.

She was sad about her son's mental state.

Maybe the court might pity him and have him admittws in an asylum instead of being placed in a pris on celk for the rest of hia life.

Or maybe Zack can help do something right?

Men of God do not hold grudges and he might heal him...just this once.She knew that J erome had hurt Zack by trying to kill his wife but can't Zack forgive him?

.

Zack's sleep was disturbed by soft sobs.

He opened hia eyes only to find Taylor awake and sobbing softly.

Hia heart leaped in hia chest as he was happy she was awake but now that she was awake reality was going to hit her hard.

Zack:ba..

Taylor:where ia my child?is he alive?did J erome manage to kill my baby Zack(crying)

Zack dropped hia head as he tried to hold hwr hand but she removed it from hia grasp.

Taylor's tears always affected him somehow and at the moment he couldn't do a thing to comfort her.

Zack:Taylor calm down my love...

She shook her head as she let the tears fall. She wanted her baby, he couldn't be dead...he couldn't be dead. He was an innocent child who did no one wrong.

Zack poured her a glass of water and handed it to her.

She sipped the water slowly as she looked at him with tears in her hazel eyes.

Zack took the glass from her once she was done and he took her hand. She tried to pull it away but he held her hand tightly as he lifted his eyes up to hers.

Zack:baby,I don't want to stress you,you just woke up from a coma and you need rest.not stress.

Taylor:I just want my baby.

Zack kissed her hand as he looked up to her with sad eyes.

Taylor shook her head.

Taylor:(crying)no Zack,bring back my baby...I want...m..m..

Zack:I an sorry baby...

She burat down into tears again as Zack rose up from his chair and he sat on the bed and brouht her head gently on her chest.

Taylor:he killed my baby why??what did my baby do to him?God should've saved my baby.he was innocent.I want my baby back Zack,i w...wa...want...

Zack:sssh....

She sobbbbed on his chest as Zack gently rubbed her back.She needed to mourn the death of their other baby.

.

.

LIKE,COMMENT,SHARE

[03/12, 09:58] Lynne: WDC

.

.

When she finally calmed down,Zack just pushed her hair back.

Zack:okay?

She nodded as fresh tears made their way to her eyes.

Taylor:We have to move on right?I don't want to be depressed again.I just...

She used her hands to try and wipe her tears away.

Taylor:we can have another baby right?

She looked at Zack with a bit of hope in her eyes.

Taylor:He is gone but we can stil have other kids right?

Zack nodded.

Zack:baby you need to heal,take your time...

Taylor:I just have a feeling that I cried for our baby before,was I awake when we lost the child?

He shook his head.Taylor sighed and looked at him.

Taylor:Are you okay?

Zack:I'll get over it..

She just nodded.She opened her mouth to try and speak and she closed it again.

She held onto him tightly as she closed her eyes.

She wanted to mourn her baby and get over it.Move on.Forget Jerome for good.He has haunted her for years and just killing her baby in cold blood closed the chapter.

Taylor:is he in jail?

Zack:yes...I am so sorry I didn't protect you..

Taylor:its not your fault love.I just want to move on and maybe we can have another child after five or more so years right?

She blinked as tears made their way to her eyes once again.She never got to hold her baby boy but he must be safe wherever he is.

Zack:sleep and we'll talk more when you're awake.Rest MaZulu.

Taylor nodded as she allowed sleep to take over.

.

Zack left her room as soon as he was sure she was asleep.

The family looked at him expectantly and he smiled.

Ava:she is good?

Zack:broken but awake.

Lindi:Thank God.

Eva:Sanele you can relax now..

They chuckled as they looked at Sanele who had been very stress.The mood lightened a bit as Ava called her parents telling them the good news.

They were relieved at the end of the line.

Ava smiled as she hung up and looked at everyone who was in hospital wanting her daughter to be okay.

Will pulled Zack aside.

Will:are you okay?

Zack:I am exhausted and still can't believe I lost a child but we still have another.I am also happy that Taylor woke up..

Will:God is good,she is back.

Zack:yeah man.Thank you for the support.I don't know if I would have been able to get through this without everyone's support.

Will:and you helped me when I was going through a tough time with Milla.

They both looked at Camilla who was serving everyone coffee with a smile on her face.

Zack:that is what brother are for man,and the prayers you and the guys also did on our behalf.I am so grateful.

Will:anytime Zack..

Will chuckled as he patted Zack's back and walked away..

Zack stood there.At least things were looking up.

He shoved his hands deep in his pockets as Bandile approached him.

Bandile:Zack,you have been so strong on behalf of your wife.

Zack flashed a small smile as he nodded.

Zack:baba,I guess love does that to you..

Bandile:yes.I am proud of the man you grew to become.

Zack:I can't believe I once refused my calling and you called me out on it dad.

Bandile laughed.

Bandile:you were a wild card.

Zack:I was neh?

They both laughed as they fist bumped and Zack smiled.

He felt better already.

He walked back to the rest of the family with his father.

The nurse approached them.

Nurse:Miss Amandla has been deemed healthy and

she can now be moved from the incubator.

Zack:Thank God..can I go see her?

Nurse:sure, follow me.

Zack followed the nurse and walked inside the nursery.

The nurse handed him his daughter who was fast asleep.

Zack:can you move her to her mother's room?

Nurse:of course, let me get right to it.

Zack held Amanda gently as she was covered in a pink blanket.

Zack smiled,

Zack:Amy your mother is awake and she doesn't know you exist, how about we surprise her with you sweet child?

He touched her cheek gently. She looked a lot like her mother and her hair was so soft.

Though he lost a child, he still has another. He can never hate God for whatever that happened. It was

the work of the devil.

So God is not in the wrong, He is the one that gives strength to overcome a lot of things.

Nurse: Mr Zulu we are done setting up her things in her mother's room.

Zack: Thank you.

He followed the nurse out of the nursery whilst holding Amandla in his arms.

The family saw him carrying the baby girl and tears filled their eyes.

.

Taylor opened her eyes. She rubbed them to get rid of the sleep. Her heart still felt heavy at the thought of not holding her baby.

She then looked around the room and she saw a baby crib.

She frowned. She lost a baby, why did they bring a crib. This must be some cruel joke on her.

Tears filled her eyes and she rubbed her eyes with

her fists.

The door opened and Zack was holding a baby in his arms.

Taylor:why are you holding a baby...Zack??

Zack smiled as he sat down on the chair still holding Amandla.

Zack:baby are you well rested?

Taylor nodded with tears running down her cheeks.

Zack:I want you to meet someone my love...

Zack gave her the baby to hold and she looked at him with teary eyes.

Zack:meet Amandla,she is our baby.You were carrying twins and she survived.

Taylor:oh...

She held Amandla in her arms as she could not believe it.

Taylor:our baby,she's ours....our baby..she survived.

She held Amandla who looked so

peaceful.Amandla,strength.

Taylor:Zack..I..

Zack:its okay just hold her baby,she is ours.She needs a strong mother,we will always miss our baby boy but we have her.

Taylor:Maatla,that was our boy's name.And God blessed us with Amandla..I...

She smiled looking at Amandla.

Zack:she looks like you.

Taylor:she has your nose and she's our baby...

She smiled as fresh tears rolled down her cheeks.

.

5 years later

.

Next chapter at 10pm,check the posting schedule just to be sure.

Have a nice day readers

[03/12, 09:59] Lynne: WDC

.

90

.

Zack:so babe what are you thinking about?

Taylor:I didn't think it would end like this.You know.We survived.

He was rubbing her feet.

Zack:yes my princess we survived.

Taylor:I love you Zack.

He chuckled.

Zack:I love you Tshepi.

She giggled.

Taylor:you know I feel so weird when people call me by that name.

Zack:I know.So the future?

Taylorr:we'll see.As long as I'm with you and we keep on fighting this spiritually then I'm good.

Zack:did I tell you that I love you woman?

She giggled.

Taylor:you did Mr Zulu or should I say Prophet Zulu.

When she says Prophet its just a turn on.

Zack:let me say it again nana.

She giggled again.Her and her giggles though.

Zack:I love you a lot and I can finally say you're the rib I've been looking for.

Taylor:and you are my flesh.I was a mess and you fixed me.

Zack:I love you ok.

She laughed.

Taylor:Zack stop it,its becoming cheesy.

Zack:I love you woman.

Taylor:I know moprofeta.

She flashed her smile at him as he rubbed her swollen stomach.

Taylor:It feels like déjà vu.I think I once witnessed

this moment.

Zack laughed.

Zack:I saw this in a dream 8 years ago.

Taylor:I guess I dreamt of it too...but we have been through a lot.

Zack:yes my love,let me help you up before your peace is disturbed.

Taylor:your daughter is tiring Zachariah.

Zack:she is yours too.

Taylor:how do they handle her at kindergarten?

Zack:She behaves...

Taylor:whatever you say.

Zack helped her up on her feet and placed his hand on the small of her back.

Taylor:I want to go to choir practice.

Zack:okay,you bringing your daughter along?

Taylor:Do I have a choice?she will do anything to go..She will sing her little lungs out like the little

angel she is...

Zack:your sarcasm woman....

They walked inside the house and Amandla looked at her mother and father.

Amandla:So mama,at school it was nice.

Taylor:of course it was,what did you do?

Amandla:she wanted to take my lunchbox and I was sitting down in class alone.Mama she flew to the door and now they say I hit her.Mama...

She started tearing up.

Taylor sat on the couch and patted to the seat next to hers.

Amandla walked to her mother and sat down.

Amandla:mama I didn't touc..I..

Taylor:its okay baby.I believe you,they want us to come to school?

She nodded with teary eyes and Taylor held her cheek.

Taylor: Amy it's fine baby. We are not angry at you right daddy?

Zack: of course angel, we are not.

Amanda rubbed her eyes with her little fists and she looked at her father.

Amanda: really?

Taylor: really sweetheart.. now are you done crying?

Amanda: I want food..

Zack laughed and Amanda glared at him.

Zack: okay princess..

Taylor: want to head to choir practice? you can sing with me..

Amanda: okay

Taylor: go wear a jacket...

Amanda jumped off the couch and headed to her room.

Taylor: do you think it was a warrior angel?

Zack: it is...

Taylor rubbed her head.

Taylor:hectic,isn't she too young?

Zack:she is but no one should know.

Taylor:can't we pray for the gift to not be visible till she is at least 18..I am not ready for my child to face spiritual attacks while she is this young...

Zack:Okay..we'll pray about it..

Taylor:make her something to eat,I feel so heavy.

He raised his eyebrow as his eyes moved to her tummy.

Taylor:geez,remind me that I look like whale...

She rolled her eyes and he laughed as he prepared sandwiches for both of the ladies.

Amandla made her way to her mother and placed her head on her bulging stomach.

Amandla:mama is he able to breath in there?

Taylor chuckled as she tied Amandla's hair ribbon properly.

Taylor:yes,he is alive.You'll meet him.You will be a big sister.Ausi wa gage.

Amandla:oh,so he is gonnna be small small...

Taylor:yes darling,small small..tiny wints y baby..

Amandla:mama so I can play with him like I play with my dolls?

Taylor:Zack come get your child.My baby is not a doll..

Amandla looked at her mother waiting for an answer.

Taylor:Amy your baby brother is not a doll,he is a baby and babies sleep,you also used to sleep.

Amandla scrunched her face.

Amandla:noo mama.I don't sleep now,I am not a baby...

Taylor:go to your father and get something to eat..

Amandla:daddddyyy..

She screamed as she got off the couch and headed to the kitchen where Zack was.

.

At the mental asylum

Dr.mam there is nothing we can do,all the treatment he has underwent has not worked at all.

Sphe:Dr..

Dr:sorry mam..all we can say is that although I am a doctor,this is a spiritual matter.

Sphe nodded with tears as she watched J erome jump around the room screaming..

She walked out as the doctor and a few of the male nurses restrained J erome.His eyes were red and swollen and he had lost weight.

Five years the situation has been straining and it has gotten worse.

He is now a madman.All he says is that he is burning and hears babies crying.

She looked at her son one more time.She didn't know whether to let go or beg again for his healing but the people who can heal him said J erome needs to confess his sin and repent.

Unfortunately according to Zack he is always tight lipped when he is in the room and Jerome runs away.

There is nothing they can do as it all lies in Jerome's hands.

She checked out of the visitors roll and walked to the car with tears clouding her vision. Her son was long gone and there was nothing she could do at this point.

.

At Taylor's house

Her friends and family were busy making sure everything was in place.

Lindi:at least we had access to the place as soon as they left.

Ava:Taylor is so difficult...Kelets o is the food okay?

Kelets o:yes mam..food ready..ask Thando about the presents.

Ava looked at Thando who looked at Thandi.

Thandi: geez everything is in check people, the mother to be will be pleased.

Eva: Sanele and the guys are busy with the braai at the backyard, you know....

The women inspected their handywork once again and were thoroughly satisfied with the results.

Ava: as we wait for her to come...

Keletsotlho: the bathong don't give her a heart attack..

Eva: we won't.

Samantha: I think they are here, go tell the guys to hide in the backyard and the lights should be off.

They all waited in anticipation as the lights went off.

Taylor opened the door as she held Amanda's hand.

Amanda: mommy it's dark and it smells like cake..

Taylor: more sugar?

Zack: she is so tricky, don't give her sugar or we won't be able to sleep.

Taylor: but le ene mara, she always gets her way.

Zack:let me switch on the lights.

He switched on the lights and everyone in the room shouted "SURPRISE!!"

Taylor held her beating heart as Amanda squealed.

Amanda:mama and nana is here and grandma..

She let go of her mother's hand and just walked to her grandmothers.

Taylor was shell shocked.A surprise but how?

She looks at Zack who grinned at her as she smiled tearfully.

Taylor:guys...

Samantha:your baby shower..

Taylor:Guys...

Milla:oh stop it,Amy go join the others at the backyard garden okay sweetie?

Amy ran off outside.

Taylor:you all didn't have to do this..

Ella:we had to duh!

Ava:sit down,we dont want you falling..

They laughs as Zack held her hand and guided her to the sofa.They had decorated and it was all so pretty.Tears clouded her vision and Zack just kissed her cheek.

Zack:baby I'm heading to the garden.

Taylor:thank you..

Zack:I love you rib of my rib,bone of my bone,flesh of my flesh.

Taylor blushed and the ladies snickered as they watched the exchange.

Taylor:Zack...

Zack:I love you and you know it.You are my destiny babe.

He kissed her lips softly and bit on her lower lip before he pulled back and looked at her flushed face.

Zack:see you MaZulu.

He said bye to the ladies and headed to the

backyard.

Milla:so excited for you friend...is the baby a girl or a boy?

Taylor:I won't tell none of you ish,I want you all to be surprised but you guys....

Eva:here we go again with the tears...

Kelets o:My brother neh..

Lindi frowned and looked at Kelets o.

Lindi:what is that supposed to mean?

Samantha:she is happy.

Thandi:so happy..you want food?

Taylor shook her head as she wiped her tears away and fanned herself.

She was happy.

Taylor:I am feeling enotional....

Ella:yes we understand honey now we want to get on with the food,I am starving.

The ladies laughed as Ella just headed to the

kitchen.

Milla:don't mind her,she is expecting so let her be..

Taylor chuckled.

She was given a sash to wear and a crown.

Eva:they will join us after the braai but now we have to pamper you princess a.

Kelets o:a pedi and mani..by meee...

Taylor:this is...thank you...

Ella:don't cry again tuu...

She chuckled with tears in her eyes.Pregnancy though.

Her mother removed her shoes and she was so grateful to them for what they were doing.

.

Hours later they were sitting on the couches as they exchanged stories.

Taylor's head was on Zack's chest and Amandla

was being cuddled by her great grandfather who was sitting on the rocking chair.

Taylor looked at the whole family together. Friends who turned out to be very much family and one bad egg like Jerome didn't mean everyone was bad.

She was happy and satisfied.

Zack whispered softly in her ear.

Zack: and I believe all of this was in motion the moment I went to your village to preach.

Taylor secretly smiled at him.

Taylor: And you said my singing was good. Just good nje...

Zack chuckled softly.

Zack: you're still gonna hold that against me?

Taylor nodded with a smile.

Zack: I love you MaZulu.

Taylor: I love you more, our destinies did collide that day didn't they?

Zack:they did.When our deatibies collided our future was set,forever and always my love.

Taylor:Till death do us apart.

Zack:not death,we will still be together even in heaven.

Taylor laughed softly as she placed her hand on his chest.

Taylor:cheesy Katlego...

Zack:tired?

Taylor:nope,I still want to cuddle..

Zack:Amandla should be doing that..

Taylor:she has granddad..cuddle me..

Zack:anything for you..

He pulled her close and Taylor sighed contently as she felt his body warmth.Zack chatted with the rest as she closed her eyes.

Destiny can never be circumvented it will always take place.Her meeting Zack years ago was destiny.

Destiny brought them together and their destinies collided. It is still destiny keeping them together no matter what.

This has been When Destinies Collide. It showed just how much we can't actually control our lives but a greater entity controls all that happens in the universe and we have no choice but to follow the path already chosen for us.

This has been a wonderful journey of learning and teaching one another. Till we meet again. Its a wrap..

THE END